This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NEDL TRANSFER
HN 2UPX 1

THE WORLD'S NEED?

ONE HUNDRED OTHER MOMENTOUS QUESTIONS IN HISTORY

EVA MARSHALL SHONTS

Digitized by Google

KF2474

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

GOOD SAMARITAN

Digitized by Google

The WORLD'S NEED?

ONE HUNDRED OTHER MOMENTOUS QUESTIONS IN HISTORY

Compiled by

EVA MARSHALL SHONTS

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS

CHICAGO
THE FORGET-ME-NOT PUBLISHING COMPANY
230 SOUTH LA SALLE STREET

Digitized by Google

KF 2474

COPYRIGHTED
By EVA MARSHALL SHONTS
1920

Digitized by Google

Dedicated to the Memory
of
My Mother

"A rare rose in the garden of life"

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

PREFACE

The plan pursued in this book is simple. One hundred and one decisive questions in history are on trial. The evidence presented on ninety-five of these questions is Bible and Secular, and on five Secular.

The witnesses are from many walks of life. Historians, educators, ministers, statesmen, prophets, kings, slaves, editors, lawyers, reformers, business men, warriors, physicians, poets, artists have been summoned.

In each case the reader is to be judge and jury.

Among the valuable articles written especially for this book is one indeed unique. It is by Colonel John Sobieski, for long years "heir to the throne of Poland," a man to whom this nation owes a large debt.

Years ago, when the martyr's blood was shed on American soil for fighting the diabolical **Drink Traffic**, he dedicated his magnificent powers of leadership to the unpopular Prohibition Movement. Far out on the firing line this Pole, who had risked his life in the Civil War, battled for the freedom of American homes from the saloon.

Not content with this, in the days when the advocacy of Woman Suffrage was ridiculed and fought, again this Pole with the blood of generations of kings and queens flowing in his veins championed the cause of the enslaved, and battled for the emancipation of woman.

What a powerful rebuke the pride of **this** man in possessing the title—AMERICAN CITIZEN—**ought** to be to all who desert and betray the foundation principles on which our Republic was built!

His special article is given as evidence on Question 100.

Each purchaser of this volume is invited to reply to Question 101, by adding five words to those which on page 186 begin the answer.

Fifty dollars will be awarded for the first answer which reaches the Forget-Me-Not Publishing Company and is the same as that of the compiler.

Fifty dollars will also be awarded to the purchaser who submits to the Publishing Company the best picture portraying "The

Digitized by Google

Call of the World to America!"—provided the picture is worthy to appear on the front cover of a future edition of this book.

The beautiful words quoted in the dedication were written to the compiler by her precious and only brother Theodore in a letter containing a tribute by him to their beloved Mother.

The poem from which the verses on page 106 are taken held a large place in the heart of this wonderful Mother, who felt very keenly about the sufferings of Jesus on the Cross, and whose birthday was October seventeenth.

The gratitude of the compiler is great to Dr. Ira M. Price of the Chicago University, for the far-reaching help which he has given toward some of the choicest illustrations.

From the same source thanks are also given to different publishing companies and individuals for courtesies extended relative to a number of the pictures. Acknowledgment for these kindnesses is given under "Illustrations," pp. xi and xii.

Gratitude is also expressed to each one who has helped or encouraged in the preparation of this volume, and although the work of the compiler has been long and hard, forbearance is asked for any errors which the book contains.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION

A World in Need

PAGES

1. The call of the Springfield Republican.—2. Wesley and England. 3. Religion or revolution?—4. Startling statements of Chaplain Thomas Tiplady.—5. Amazing plea of Secretary Lane.—6. Overwhelming importance of Question 101.—7. Outstretched hands of millions plead.....

CHAPTER I.

Prophecy

1. Is there value in Bible prophecy for a "World in Perplexity"?—2. Did Isaiah and Jesus or Voltaire and Robert Ingersoll prophesy correctly as to the durability of the Bible?..... 1–13

CHAPTER II.

Ancient Babylonia

3. Was there an Old Babylonian Empire many hundred years before the Babylonian Empire of Nebuchadnezzar?—4. Who founded the Old Babylonian Empire?—5. Was there such a place as Ur of the Chaldees?—6. Is the Bible story of the flood a myth?—7. Has the prophecy of Noah foretelling the *"three great divisions of the human race"* been fulfilled?—8. What are some of the archaeological discoveries which have "dealt a terrific blow" to "radical and destructive criticism" of the Bible?—9. What was the fate of Old Babylonia?..... 14–21

CHAPTER III.

Egypt

10. Did Egypt of the Bible ever exist?—11. Could a history of the Israelites have been written in the time of Moses?—12. Did the prophecy that the Israelites would be slaves come true?—13. Did the enslaved Israelites build for Pharaoh, King of Egypt, Pithom and Raamses?—14. Did the Israelites in bondage in Egypt have to make bricks without straw?—15. Was the prophecy that the Israelites would be freed from Egyptian slavery fulfilled?—16. Did Ezekiel prophesy correctly that Egypt would be the basest of nations and never again be a great nation?—17. Was the prophecy in Isaiah that Egypt would be conquered by Assyria fulfilled?..... 22–31

CHAPTER IV.

David and Solomon

18. Was the Kingdom of David and Solomon a great one?—19. Was the prophecy to David that his son would build "an house" fulfilled?—20. Was the prophecy that Solomon's Temple might be destroyed fulfilled? 32–34

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

CHAPTER V.

The Hittites—Edom—Moab—Jericho

PAGES

21. Were the Hittites a myth?—22. Were the Edomites a myth?—23. Was there such a country as Moab?—24. Was there such a person as Mesha, King of Moab?—25. Were the prophecies of Zephaniah and Jeremiah that Moab would be destroyed fulfilled?—26. Did Jericho ever exist..... 35–38

CHAPTER VI.

Assyria

27. Was the Assyrian a powerful empire?—28. Is there any "fixed point" by which we can "accurately assign correct dates" to many "important events" in Assyrian history?—29. Who solved the problem of "the Babylonian-Assyrian cuneiform" language?—30. Did Nineveh ever exist as a great city?—31. Did Isaiah prophesy correctly that Damascus would be taken by Tiglath-Pileser of Assyria?—32. Did Sargon, King of Assyria, conquer Samaria and take the Ten Tribes of Israel captive, in fulfillment of a prophecy by Hosea?—33. Was there ever such a man as Sennacherib, King of Assyria?—34. Did the death of Sennacherib fulfill a Bible prophecy?—35. Did Nahum and Zephaniah prophesy correctly that Nineveh would be destroyed?—36. Was Nineveh destroyed by fire in fulfillment of a prophecy made 107 years before by Nahum?—37. Was the Bible prophecy that the Assyrian Empire would end fulfilled?..... 39–47

CHAPTER VII.

Modern Babylonia

38. Was there ever such a man as Daniel of the Bible?—39. Could Daniel easily have lived as Prime Minister of Babylon, although his name is not "found as yet upon the documents dating from the Sixth Century," B. C.?—40. Was there ever a Babylonian Empire with Nebuchadnezzar her greatest king?—41. Did Daniel truthfully call Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, "the head of gold"?—42. Was King Nebuchadnezzar insane for seven years, eating and living with beasts, and afterwards ruler of his dominion?—43. Was Tyre a great city as described in Isaiah?—44. Did Ezekiel prophesy correctly that Nebuchadnezzar would conquer ancient Tyre?—45. Was the Bible prophecy that the Jews would be taken as captives from Jerusalem to Babylon fulfilled?—46. Did Zedekiah, King of Judah, go to Babylon without seeing it, in fulfillment of a prophecy made six years before by Ezekiel?—47. Was there such a character as Belshazzar?—48. Can Belshazzar being called the son of Nebuchadnezzar in the book of Daniel be "readily accounted for"?—49. How could Belshazzar have been King of Babylon, when "no tablets have been found dated in his reign"?—50. Did Daniel by a lion with eagle's wings describe the kingdom and fate of modern Babylon?—51. Over one hundred and fifty years before the event, did Isaiah prophesy correctly that Babylon would be conquered?—52. Did Isaiah prophesy correctly, 174 years before Babylon was captured by Cyrus, that he would enter the city through gates?—53. Did the Jews return from Babylon to Jerusalem in fulfillment of Bible prophecy?—54. Did Daniel prophesy, 2418 years before the battle of Waterloo, that Napoleon never could be ruler of Europe? — 55. Were the prophecies in Jeremiah that Babylon would "become heaps," and in Isaiah that owls would dwell there fulfilled?—56. Has the prophecy in Isaiah 13:20 in regard to the Arab and his tent been fulfilled?—57. Has a prophecy in Jeremiah about the stones of Babylon been fulfilled in a wonderful way?..... 48–69

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

CHAPTER VIII.

MEDO-PERSIA

PAGES

58. Was Medo-Persia a great country?—59. Did Daniel by a bear prophesy the Kingdom of Medo-Persia?—60. Did Daniel prophesy the reigns of Cambyses, Smerdis, and Darius Hystaspes, kings of Medo-Persia after Cyrus?—61. Did Daniel prophesy Xerxes, "far richer than them all," as successor to Darius Hystaspes?—62. Had Daniel prophesied 222 years before the event that Persia, led by Darius, would be conquered by Greece, led by Alexander the Great, at the battle of Arbela? 70–75

CHAPTER IX.

GREECE

63. Did Daniel by a leopard prophesy the Kingdom of Greece?—64. Did Daniel prophesy that the kingdom of Alexander would be a great one?—65. Did what "has been pronounced the greatest military achievement of Alexander" fulfill a prophecy made by Ezekiel 258 years before the event?—66. Did the result of the battle of Ipsus (301 B. C.) fufill a prophecy by Daniel that no descendant of Alexander the Great would ever sit on his throne, but that his kingdom would be divided between four?—67. Did Daniel prophesy, 369 years before the event, that Greece would be conquered by Rome? 76–79

CHAPTER X.

ROME

68. Did Daniel through prophecy give a correct picture of the Roman Kingdom?—69. Did Daniel prophesy, 435 years before Rome was mistress of the world, her marvelous strength and power?—70. Did Roman soldiers, led by Pompey, conquer Syria in the year 64 B. C. and Jerusalem in the year 63 B. C., in fulfillment of prophecies made by Daniel 470 and 471 years before those events?—71. Hundreds of years before the events, did Daniel prophesy that Julius Caesar and Cleopatra would become infatuated with each other, and that afterward Cleopatra would turn against Rome?—72. Did Daniel prophesy the death of Julius Caesar 490 years before the event?—73. About 425 years before the event, did Daniel foretell that Augustus Caesar would be a tax-raiser?—74. About 900 or 1000 years before the event, did Daniel prophesy that the Roman kingdom would be divided into ten kingdoms? 80–84

CHAPTER XI.

JESUS THE CHRIST IN PROPHECY

75. Did Isaiah prophesy 712 years before Christ that John the Baptist would be His forerunner?—76. Did Jesus fulfill a prophecy in the Pentateuch that a Star would come out of Jacob?—77. Was Christ a descendant of David in fulfillment of prophecies made many hundred years before His birth by Moses, Isaiah and Jeremiah?—78. Did Micah, 710 years before He was born, prophesy the birth-place of Jesus? — 79. Did Isaiah prophesy correctly that Jesus would be a Light to the World? — 80. Did Isaiah prophesy correctly that Jesus Christ would be a corner-stone?—81. Is Jesus Christ the World's Masterpiece?—82. Was Jesus a Great Physician in fulfillment of Bible prophecy?—83. Did the Psalms prophesy the sufferings of Christ on the cross?—84. Did Isaiah prophesy the death of Jesus and the power of the Cross of Calvary?—85. Did Mary, the mother of Jesus, prophesy correctly that all generations would call her "blessed"?—

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

PAGES

86. Did Jesus die of a broken heart; and 487 years before Christ was born, did Zachariah prophesy that the body of Jesus would be pierced?—87. Did Jesus prophesy correctly His own resurrection?—88. Did Jesus prophesy, 37 years before the event, the destruction of Jerusalem by the Roman general Titus in A. D. 70?—89. Did Jesus prophesy correctly that not one stone would be left upon another in the Temple of Jerusalem? 85–111

CHAPTER XII.

THE DARK DAY AND THE FALLING OF THE STARS

90. Was the Dark Day—May 19, 1780—foretold by John the Revelator? —91. Was the falling of the stars as figs from a tree on November 13, 1833, foretold by John the Revelator? 112–116

CHAPTER XIII.

PROPHECY AND MODERN INVENTIONS

92. About 2500 years ago, did Daniel foretell the coming of our great modern inventions? 117–118

CHAPTER XIV.

PROPHECY AND THE LATE EUROPEAN WAR

93. Did Jesus prophesy the perplexity of the world during the late European war?—94. Did Daniel, about 2500 years ago, prophesy failure for William Hohenzollern's dream of World Empire?—95. Did the "intricate relationships".... "existing between the reigning houses of Europe" when the late European war began fulfill Bible prophecy? 119–123

CHAPTER XV.

PROPHECY AND TO-DAY—WORLD DRINK TRAFFIC—WORLD EXTRAVAGANCE

96. Is there a message from the Prophets to the nations of to-day?— 97. Should all nations heed the warnings of Isaiah and other Bible prophets against the Drink Traffic?—98. Should the women of the world heed the warning of Isaiah against extravagance in dress? 124–146

CHAPTER XVI.

PROPHECY AND FOOD CONSERVATION

99. Ten days after Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael and Azariah were captives in the court of Babylon, did their health and intellects presage the call of Mr. Hoover, made in 1917, for the people in the United States to eat less meat, sugar, etc? 147–152

CHAPTER XVII.

ISAIAH—THE PROPHET OF NAZARETH—AND A WORLD IN NEED

100. Is America called to be the Good Samaritan to the World?— 101. The World's Need? 153–186

Digitized by Google

ILLUSTRATIONS

ALPHABETICAL ORDER

PAGE

BEHISTUN ROCK, THE 42

By permission of Funk & Wagnalls, as publishers of the Cassell books, reproduced from *The Monuments and the Old Testament,* published by the American Baptist Publication Society, copyrighted by Ira M. Price, Ph.D.

BURDEN, HOW LONG WILL THE WORLD BEAR THIS? 131

By permission of the Missionary Review Publishing Company.

CHRIST HEALING THE SICK 98

By permission of George P. Brown & Co., Publishers.

CRUCIFIXION, THE 102

By permission of George P. Brown & Co., Publishers.

CYRUS, CLAY CYLINDER OF 64

From Budge, *Babylonian Life and History,* reproduced from *The Monuments and the Old Testament,* published by the American Baptist Publication Society.

DARKENING SUN 112

By permission of the Southern Publishing Association.

DELUGE TABLET, A CHALDEAN 16

By permission of W. D. Forde, Lecturer.

FALLING STARS 116

By permission of the Southern Publishing Association.

FOUR KINGDOMS 55

By permission of the Southern Publishing Association.

GOOD SAMARITAN ..... Frontispiece

By permission of George P. Brown & Co., Publishers.

HAMMURABI, PORTION OF INSCRIPTION OF KING 14

From J. de Morgan's *Délégation en Perse,* Tome IV., reproduced from *The Monuments and the Old Testament,* published by the American Baptist Publication Society.

JESUS THE CONSOLER 97

By permission of George P. Brown & Co., Publishers.

KHORSABAD COLOSSI IN THE LOUVRE, VIEW OF THE 40

From a photograph by Ira M. Price, Ph.D. (as they now appear in the Louvre, Paris), reproduced from *The Monuments and the Old Testament,* published by the American Baptist Publishing Society.

LIBERTY ENLIGHTENING THE WORLD 156

By permission of George P. Brown & Co., Publishers.

Digitized by Google

ILLUSTRATIONS

PAGE

Moabite Stone, The 37

By permission of Thomas Nelson & Sons, publishers of *Nelson's Illustrated Teachers' Bible*, reproduced from *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, published by the American Baptist Publication Society.

Pay Day 140

By permission of Will K. Reeme, a mighty Prohibition Warrior, Kansas City, Missouri.

Resurrection, The 109

By permission of George P. Brown & Co., Publishers.

Rosetta Stone, The 22

By permission of Thomas Nelson & Sons, publishers of *Nelson's Illustrated Teachers' Bible*, reproduced from *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, published by the American Baptist Publication Society.

Sennacherib, Clay Cylinder of 44

By permission of W. D. Forde, Lecturer.

Shepherds, Apparition of 86

By permission of George P. Brown & Co., Publishers.

Sobieski, John, Colonel 161

By permission of Colonel Sobieski, for long years "heir to the throne of Poland."

Titus, Arch of 110

By permission of George P. Brown & Co., Publishers.

Waterloo, Battle of 66

By permission of the Southern Publishing Association.

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION

"Writers who can tell a stupified world what this fearful portent means, who can throw light on the great fundamental problems of the race, and give some hint as to its destiny, will have an attentive and even anxious hearing."

This clarion call from the editor of the "Springfield Republican," in 1914 was but a forerunner of the mighty cry for help to-day, from a war-mad, strike-possessed, sin-cursed, heart-broken world.

"Wesley, who died the year before the Marseillaise was written, saved England from a Revolution similar to that which swept over France; for the revival of religion led to social reform, and made revolution unnecessary. History repeats itself, and, during the next few years, the Church must decide whether the social wrongs of the present age are to be dealt with by religion or revolution.

We are as near to revolution as Pompeii to Vesuvius on the day before the eruption. Anything may happen at any time. The separation, distrust and hatred which exist at present between various classes of society cannot go on forever. A crisis must be reached soon, for life is becoming intolerable to everybody."

These are strange and startling words to be published in 1919 by Chaplain Thomas Tiplady of England, author of "The Cross at the Front," and "The Soul of the Soldier."

".... Oh, for a few days of real sanity, when with composed nerves and calm judgment and without bitterness of feeling we could look at our problems and meet them with our traditional hopefulness and confidence.

"Recklessness is in our blood, a great willingness to take risks that we have no right to take. We will suffer for this spasm of self-assertiveness on all sides. I want to see a new conference of leading minds that will think in practical terms, a real council of national defense against the kind of civil war which some seem to think another irrepressible conflict."

"Oh, for a few days of real sanity,"—what a plea—what an amazing plea in October, 1919, from Secretary Lane, Secretary of Interior of the greatest Republic in the world!

Digitized by Google

These three messages voicing pulpit, press and state represent whole libraries of daily papers, books and magazines which could be collected, telling of the terrible sea of perplexity in which our old world now rocks and strives to sail.

Whoso is the pen which can portray the overwhelming importance of the **last** question in this book—**The World's Need?**

With one hundred and one strategic questions, covering thousands of years, this volume contains a multitude of gems of thought. Many are clothed in exquisite language, and are culled from the writings of some of the greatest intellects and rarest souls this world has ever seen.

Hence the compiler, knowing the work **could** be a "liberal education," physically, mentally and spiritually, would beseech each reader to earnestly study its contents with an open mind and heart.

Let the outstretched hands of millions in a world in need so plead.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER I.

PROPHECY.

1. Is there value in Bible prophecy for a "World in Perplexity"?

Bible Evidence.

Amos 3:7—Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but he revealeth his secret unto his servants the prophets.

John 5:39—Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.

II Peter 1:19-21—We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

Secular Evidence.

No section of the Old Testament, and but little of the New, comes so close to the needs of our day as does the prophetic literature.

J. M. Powis Smith, Ph.D., Associate Professor of Old Testament Language and Literature in the University of Chicago.—Preface, *The Prophet and His Problems,* 1914.

Perhaps no better description of the true prophet could be found than that given in Jeremiah 23:29: "Is not my word like fire? saith Jehovah; and like a hammer thatbreaketh the rock in pieces?" Amos, Hosea, Isaiah, Micah, Jeremiah, and all the other prophets smote sin with sledge-hammer blows. No true prophet ever compromises with people as to their sins.

John R. Sampey, D.D., LL.D., Professor of Interpretation of the Old Testament, Southern Baptist Theological Seminary, in *The Biblical Review,* April, 1918, p. 279.

We account the Scriptures of God to be the most sublime philosophy. I find more sure marks of authenticity in the Bible than in any profane history whatever.

Isaac Newton in *Forty Thousand Quotations Prose and Poetical,* compiled by Chas. N. Douglas, p. 1546.

Digitized by Google

In the books of Daniel and the Revelation there are recorded long lines of prophecy which foretell many of the principal events of the world's history from six hundred years before Christ to the end of time. These lines of prophecy, which show the work and the position of one nation after another in the stream of time, are of great value to mankind. That some do not see this value does not effect the question. The blind do not see the sun, yet that luminary keeps steadily to its purpose—giving the world its light and heat. The blind sustain the loss of the light. So with those who are blind regarding the prophetic light....

A light in a dark place is to show us where we are, and to guide us in the way we ought to go. The prophecies, likewise, are to show men and women where they are in the world's history, and to guide them through the dark labyrinths of danger. Those who set the prophecies aside as of little value suffer great loss. They are like a man who would close his eyes to the light of the sun.

ARTHUR G. DANIELLS, World Traveler and Lecturer, *A World in Perplexity*, pp. 85, 86.

Talk about prophecy! What kind of Bible students are we, if we neglect the prophetic portions of the Bible? Three-fourths of the Bible is filled with prophecy.

REV. JAS. M. GRAY, D.D., Dean Moody Bible Institute, Chicago, "The Bible, Prophecy and the War," in *Good News for Russia*, p. 212.—1918.

We often say with truth that no man is educated unless he knows the Scriptures; we should add that no man knows the Scriptures unless he knows the prophets, and yet many of us are intrusting the religious education of our children to pious young persons who have a smattering of the external facts about the kings, but who have scarcely so much as heard that there were such men as the prophets. For such ignorance of the prophets we ministers are to blame. If our people are to value these men who upheld the hands of the kings that were true, and who thundered doom against those that were false, we must lead the way. In the Sabbath school we must somehow teach our young folk to read their Bible so that they will not breathe a sigh of relief when they have finished the Minor Prophets.....

The prophets, first of all, were preachers: champions of righteousness, and heralds of the Promise. The essence of preaching, according to Phillips Brooks, is twofold: truth and personality; or better still, truth through personality. And a sermon is a spiritual message from God, through a man's experience, and thence to the souls of other men. When we apply this lofty standard, where can we find such preachers as the Old Testament prophets, and such sermons as they spake and wrote? Is it any wonder that Professor James Stalker, of Glasgow, when lecturing at Yale on how to preach, devoted more than half of his course to the prophets as preachers?

These preachers are worthy of study as masters of style. They were the leading orators of their own times, and to this day they have never been excelled. They were blessed with many gifts and graces,

Digitized by Google

all of which they dedicated to their high calling; hence they spoke with tremendous force, with impassioned feeling, and with that intangible something which we call eloquence almost divine. Their writings have served as models for the orators of later times, many of whom have counted it an honour to be told that they had modelled their periods in the manner of Isaiah, the prince among orators.

ANDREW W. BLACKWOOD, *The Prophets Elijah to Christ*, pp. 13, 14, 21, 22. Studies given at various assemblies, including the Montreat N. C. Bible Conference, Rev. R. C. Anderson, Southern Presbyterian, President.

It is when the hour of the conflict is over that history comes to a right understanding of the strife, and is ready to exclaim, "Lo, God is here, and we knew Him not!"

Bancroft in *Forty Thousand Quotations Prose and Poetical*, p. 955.

For the past fifteen years I have tried to incite my students in New York University, in Rutgers College, and now in the Seminary, to read the Bible, not as a task, but as a pleasure, and have had fair success. The books of the Prophets look very dull simply as books but when we look at them as largely sketches of orations and exercise our historical imagination to hear the orators speak, they become intensely interesting. I have tried in the classroom to so describe the times, the questions of the day, and the men that we could imagine ourselves in the crowd facing Isaiah, for instance, as he held the multitude spell-bound by his eloquence.

FERDINAND S. SCHENCK, D.D., LL.D., Professor of Preaching in the Theological Seminary, New Brunswick, N. J.,—Preface, *The Oratory and Poetry of the Bible.*

Prophecy is the mould of history.

REV. A. J. GORDON, D.D., quoted by W. B. Riley, D.D.

As a matter of intelligence we should study prophecy, for it is impossible to understand the times in which we live without this study.

Dr. C. I. Scofield's Question Box, compiled by Ella E. Pohle, p. 119.

There are no songs to be compared to the songs of Zion, no orations equal to those of the Prophets, and no politics equal to those the Scriptures can teach us.

MILTON in *Greatest Thoughts About the Bible*, compiled by J. Gilchrist Lawson, Manager Glad Tidings Publishing Company.

With Isaiah sank into the grave the greatest classic of Israel. Never did the speech of Canaan pour forth with more brilliant splendor and triumphant beauty than from his lips. He has a strength and power of language, a majesty and sublimity of expression, an inexhaustible richness of fitting and stirring imagery, that overwhelms the reader, nay, fairly bewilders him.

CARL HEINRICH CORNILL, Doctor of Theology and Professor of Old Testament History in the University of Königsberg.

Digitized by Google

God had an object in calling the Jewish nation to separate themselves from other nations of the world. It was that this people might stand before the world as light-bearers. As a beacon set on a hill, Israel was to send beams of light to the world. The plan of education made known to Israel through her prophets was the means of keeping that light burning. When this God-given plan was neglected, the light, as a candle deprived of the life-giving oxygen, burned dim. Then it was that the nation was pressed upon all sides by the foe.

S. N. HASKELL, author of *The Cross and Its Shadow*, and *The Story of the Seer of Patmos,—The Story of Daniel the Prophet*, pp. 17, 18.

Men, with their finite wisdom, write of events after they have taken place, and are not able to get even that correct. God, with His infinite wisdom, writes of events before they have taken place; and the pen of verified history confirms the writing.

C. M. SNOW, *The Prophetic History of the World.*

The prophecies of the Bible are like rare diamonds lying hidden in the soltitude of the mine. The practiced eye of the prospector discovers the gems, and intuitively reads their value; and the skillful hand of the lapidary brings out their many-faced beauties in all their sparkling glory. Every facet shines like the sun. One cannot exhaust a diamond; neither can one exhaust the prophecies. New facets remain to be polished, to add their brilliant reflection to the whole.

URIAH SMITH, Introduction—*The Story of Daniel the Prophet*, by S. N. HASKELL.

But, taken as a whole, the Prophetic order of the Jewish Church remains alone. It stands like one of those vast monuments of ancient days—with ramparts broken, with inscriptions defaced, but stretching from hill to hill, conveying in its long line of arches the rill of living water over deep valley and thirsty plain, far above all the puny modern buildings which have grown up at its feet, and into the midst of which it strides with its massive substructions, its gigantic height, its majestic proportions, unequalled and unrivalled.

DEAN STANLEY, *Lectures on the History of the Jewish Church*, Fifth Edition, Vol. I, p. 392.

You know last quarter our Sabbath School lessons were on the book of Revelation.... I learned the book by heart, and you can never guess one half the consolation I receive from that experience. Night or day, when evil or useless thoughts come into my mind I have a perfect antidote. No matter how dark or how far from home, I can read chapter after chapter.... I wish I had done that when I was young, before my memory was so treacherous. But even this seems a blessing in disguise; it only compels me to study it more often. Once or twice every week I say it all over. Now I am beginning on the book of Daniel. I just began last week, and can now say the seventh, eighth, and part of the ninth chapters.

WILLIAM BRICKEY, when a farmer seventy-six years old, near Kamiah, Idaho, in a letter to his son, 1919.

Digitized by Google

The Jews are among the aristocracy of every land; if a literature is called rich in the possession of a few classic tragedies, what shall we say to a national tragedy lasting for fifteen hundred years, in which the poets and the actors were also the heroes.

GEORGE ELIOT in *Forty Thousand Quotations Prose and Poetical*, p. 104.

The revelations of prophecy are facts which exhibit the divine omniscience. So long as Babylon is in heaps; so long as Nineveh lies empty, void, and waste; so long as Egypt is the basest of kingdoms; so long as Tyre is a place for the spreading of nets in the midst of the sea; so long as Israel is scattered among all nations; so long as Jerusalem is trodden underfoot of the Gentiles; so long as the great empires of the world march on in their predicted course,—just so long we have proof that one Omniscient Mind dictated the predictions of that book, and "Prophecy came not in old time by the will of man."

H. L. HASTINGS, from an address before the Sixteenth Annual Convention of the Massachusetts Y. M. C. A., at Spencer, Mass.

I know not why it should be considered so strange a thing that God should make a revelation to man. If I mistake not, it would have been much stranger if he had not.... Shall not a father speak to his own child?

MARK HOPKINS, D.D., LL.D., at one time President of Williams College.

Indeed we cannot reject prophecy and still be Christian in our thought.

ROBERT MCWATTY RUSSELL, D.D., LL.D., Professor of Bible Doctrine and Homiletics, Moody Institute.

Our estimate of the worth of the Old Testament will depend largely upon our attitude to the Hebrews as the recipients and custodians of God's revelation to men. Their history is "like a piece of shot silk; hold it at one angle and you see dark purple, hold it at another and you see bright golden tints."....

The Old Testament, above all other books, has spiritual and religious value as the record of God's revelation to the world.... The Old Testament is an integral part of the Word of God, a source of inspiration, and a guide to ethical life. The problem of our day is to rediscover its value and to portray it to men....

That the Old Testament has *historical* value is obvious to every student of antiquity. It is the Ariadne's thread to the archaeologist. (Cf. Genesis 10 and 14.) It is likewise the fountain head of what is known as "the philosophy of history."

The Hebrews were the first to take a teleological view of the world, the first to interpret human events in terms of God's providence. Other histories displayed the disciplinary love of God, but it was left for the Hebrews to discern that love and to describe it in terms of God's love. To them it was not enough to study mere events, they sought the underlying principles and showed the nexus of cause and effect. Ottley, in eulogizing this quality in Hebrew historians, goes so far as to define their inspiration as "the ability to see God's hand in human events."....

Digitized by Google

Few men adequately appreciate what the Old Testament has meant to Christianity.... It has wrought itself into the very warp and woof of Christianity. This was possible because the essence of the Old Testament is love.... Men are wont to say that the Old Testament reveals a God of justice, whereas the New Testament, a God of love. Such a statement is much narrower than the facts. The God of the Old Testament is also the God of the New, and His name is love: to this the Psalms, Deuteronomy, and especially the prophecies of Hosea bear witness.

George L. Robinson, Ph.D., Professor Old Testament Literature and Exegesis, McCormick Theological Seminary, *The Abiding Value of the Old Testament.*—1911.

It must be remembered, however, that the Bible contains gold, and almost anyone is willing to dig for gold, especially if it is certain that he will find it. It is certain that one will find gold in the Bible, if he digs.... We cannot all be profound students of nature; we can all be profound students of Scripture. Many an otherwise illiterate person has a marvelous grasp of Bible truth. It was acquired by study. There are persons who have studied little else, who have studied the Scriptures, by the hour, daily, and their consequent wisdom is the astonishment and sometimes the dismay of scholars and theologians.

R. A. Torrey, Dean of the Bible Institute of Los Angeles, *How to Study the Bible for Greatest Profit,* pp. 11-13.

Abraham Lincoln was born in a cabin of Kentucky, of parents who could hardly read; born a new Moses in the solitude of the desert, where are forged all the great and obstinate thoughts, monotonous like the desert, and, like the desert, sublime; growing up among those primeval forests, which, with their fragrance, send up a cloud of incense, and, with their murmurs, a cloud of prayers to heaven;.... reading no other book than the Bible, the book of sorrows and great hopes, dictated often by the prophets to the sound of fetters they dragged through Nineveh and Babylon.

Emilio Castelar, in *Holy-Days and Holidays,* compiled by Edward M. Deems, A.M., Ph.D., p. 472.

I wish to bear a personal testimony to the value of Bible Prophecy. Years ago I was attending school in a college town, and in the course of my reading came on to the "Age of Reason" by a certain noted infidel. Various contributing circumstances at just the right moment swept me from the faith in which I had been reared, and I gave up every idea I had of God, or Christ, or salvation. For seven years I drifted, just drifted.

Finally I was led by the rapidly developing spirit of religious persecution shown in several of the states about the year 1880 and onward, to re-examine the prophecies of the Bible. I read thoroughly, and spent months is research of history. When I compared the eleventh of Daniel with its most marvelous and accurate fulfillment, I yielded to the overwhelming conviction that the Bible is the work of an omnipotent and omniscient God. Daniel and the Revelation became

Digitized by Google

my earnest study. Later I yielded my life to the faith of my early youth, and have never since ceased to praise my Heavenly Father for sparing me from going onto the rocks of infidelity to my final ruin.

No man, in my judgment, can give a thoughtful earnest study to Daniel and the Revelation, and the events already fulfilled, without knowing that there is a God who reigns over all; and then the life of Christ as portrayed in the Gospels will lead him to the Saviour's feet.

JUSTUS G. LAMSON, Chaplain Hinsdale Sanitarium, 1919.

The general diffusion of the Bible is the most effectual way to civilize and humanize mankind.

CHANCELLOR KENT, in *The Biblical Review*, January, 1918.

Prophecy is equivalent to any miracle, and is itself miraculous. Alexander Keith, in "Evidence of Prophecy," page 13, truly says: "If the prophecies of the Scriptures can be proved to be genuine; if they be of such nature as no foresight of man could possibly have predicted; if the events foretold in them were described hundreds or even thousands of years before those events became parts of the history of man; and if the history itself correspond with the prediction, then the evidence which the prophecies impart is a sign and a wonder to every age; *no clearer testimony or greater assurance of truth can be given;* and if men do not believe Moses and the prophets, neither would they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead."

If the prophecies were false, nothing could admit of easier detection; if true, nothing could be more impossible to have been conceived by man. Time infallibly must refute or realize them. Of the thousand predictions made in the Bible, some eight hundred have been fulfilled, and others are fulfilling now.

EARLE ALBERT ROWELL (A Converted Infidel), Field Secretary of the American Bible Society, *The Bible in the Critics' Den, or Modern Infidelity Challenged and Refuted*, p. 106.

History is but the unrolled scroll of prophecy.

JAMES A. GARFIELD, in *Forty Thousand Quotations Prose and Poetical*, p. 953.

In the prophecy of Daniel is found the first definite chronological prophecy of the first advent of Christ.

J. ELWIN WOODWARD, *Historic and Prophetic Diagram of the World*, p. 92.

But along with this inflexible demand for righteousness, the prophets revealed attributes and characteristics in God so lovely, so tender, so faithful, that to remain in ignorance of the prophetic writings is to deprive the soul of a vision of God which every soul of man deeply needs....

It is impossible to overstate the loss to spirituality, to comprehension of God in himself and in his immutable purposes toward the earth and the race of men, resulting from this stupid neglect of nearly one-fourth in bulk of the Bible.

C. I. SCOFIELD, D.D., *What Do the Prophets Say?*, pp. 23, 24.

Digitized by Google

The tourist who goes to Boston in quest of works of art soon finds his way to the Public Library, and among all its treasures he discovers nothing more interesting and helpful than Sargent's paintings of the Old Testament prophets. Sargent was an artist rather than an interpreter of Scripture; his creations are more worthy of note for their individuality than for their likeness to these men of the Bible; and so the tourist who brings away with him from Boston a vision of this work of art, as well as a copy to hang in his home, should turn to his Bible to learn how well the artist has reproduced the majesty of Isaiah and the sweetness of Hosea, but how dismally he has failed to show the strength of Amos and the tenderness of Jeremiah.

These men of old should appeal to all of us who are interested in personality. Nowhere in all history and literature, not even in the Bible, can we find a body of men who for character and attainment surpass these prophets of Judah and Israel. Where, for example, in all the history of these two nations can we find four kings, to whom the world is so much indebted as to the four prophets mentioned above? Where among all the priests? And even among the apostles, as portrayed in "The Last Supper," which four should we select? If we scan our own age, with all its boasted progress, we shall look in vain for four such giants of thought and action. These comparisons are hazardous, for we cannot weigh men as we weigh cattle; but only when we set the prophets over against other men of might, do we begin to value the "force of their inspired personality."

The prophets could not have excelled in public speech had they not also been gifted with poetic powers. Even when not speaking in words which could be printed as poetry, they employed that sort of heightened prose which is close akin to verse. But in many of their loftiest messages, such as the fifty-third chapter of Isaiah, they were speaking with all the rhythm, the beauty and the power of the most exquisite poetry; and if such passages were printed in our English Bible in a some-what worthy form, we might catch a vision new and strange—

"Like some watchers of the skies
When a new planet swims into his ken."

ANDREW W. BLACKWOOD, *The Prophets—Elijah to Christ*, pp. 11, 12, 22.

The Bible is the most quotable book in all literature. You may take Shakespeare and Dante together, take Milton and Horace, put in the Koran and Confucius, and then boil them all down, and the quotable things in all of them put together are but a fraction of the sayings in the Bible that fasten themselves in your mind.

ALBERT J. BEVERIDGE, in *The Bible as Good Literature*, quoted in *Greatest Things About the Bible*, pp. 28, 29; compiled by J. Gilchrist Lawson.

Prophecy is the head light of Christianity, flashing its rays o'er the track of time.... It is a staff for weary pilgrims to lean upon, as they journey toward the kingdom.... It is a sword of truth for the Christian soldier in his battle with infidelity. It is the X-ray of Omniscience photographing history. It is the seal of inspiration.

Digitized by Google

It is divine eye-salve imparting sight to the blind. It is the handkerchief of consolation wiping away tears.... What the light-house is to the storm-tossed mariner, the red-signal light to the engineer, and the alarm-bell to the fireman, that prophecy is to the saint. It is a danger-signal. What the anchor is to the ship, the brake to the car, and the bridle to the horse, that prophecy is to the true Christian. It is a check. What a foundation is to a house, capital to a business, and facts to a proposition, that prophecy is to faith. It is a solid basis. What bread is to the hungry, water to the thirsty, and shelter to the outcast, that prophecy is to hope. It is an absolute necessity.

H. W. Bowman, in *The Greater New York Special,* published by The Greater New York Tract Society.

In an age when the closest scrutiny is given in all lines of both scientific and religious investigation, and proof is required ere men will accept any claims, especially when such claims partake of the supernatural, the man who asserts faith in the Word of God is oftentimes ridiculed and classed as an easy dupe or a fanatic. It is then that the powerful claims of prophecy make themselves respected, and an answer is given which startles the uninitiated, and causes the candid mind to pause and investigate, and finally yield to a weight of evidence, overwhelming and positive. There is no argument so strong, no philosophy so potent, to overthrow the cavils of the unbeliever, or to silence the challenge of the infidel, as the voice of prophecy.

W. A. Westworth, in *The Greater New York Special,* published by The Greater New York Tract Society.

The Salvation Oration, Isaiah 24-27, described the songs of praise arising after the silence of despair. The Shiloh Oration of Jeremiah, Jeremiah 7-10, depicted in terrible terms the results of unrighteous living. Many passages from these ancient books are among the brightest gems of the world's oratory. The wonderful imagination of Isaiah brings before our eyes his vision of the dead kingdoms arising from their graves to exult over Babylon as she falls into the grave, Isaiah 14:9-20.

In like manner, to cheer the oppressed of his people, Ezekiel gives the elaborate description of Tyre as a stately ship brought to silence in the midst of the seas, Ezekiel 27. Nahum, in his short book, describes the awful majesty of God as he leads the forces of destruction against Nineveh....

The element of poetry is very large in the Bible. The Books of Psalms, Job, Proverbs, Song of Songs, and Lamentations are entirely poetical. The line between poetry and rhetoric being less sharply marked in the Hebrew than in our English literature, the great orations of the Prophets not infrequently rise into poetic strains. In the historic books also a vivid story sometimes bursts forth from prose into poetry. He who has the poetic ear will also gladly recognize that many of the sayings of Christ are gems of poetry, radiant with beauty and ringing with music.

Ferdinand S. Schenck, D.D., LL.D., *The Oratory and Poetry of the Bible,* pp. 24, 203.

Digitized by Google

I passed into the music-room of Psalms, where the Spirit swept the keyboard of nature and brought forth the dirgelike wail of the weeping prophet Jeremiah to the grand, impassioned strain of Isaiah, until it seemed that every reed and pipe of God's great organ of nature responded to the tuneful harp of David, the sweet singer of Israel.

BILLY SUNDAY, in *Greatest Thoughts About the Bible,* compiled by J. Gilchrist Lawson, p. 26.

When Ambrose closed the doors of the church of Milan against the blood-stained hands of the devout Theodosius, he acted in the spirit of a prophet. When Ken, in spite of his doctrine of the Divine right of Kings, rebuked Charles II. on his deathbed for his long unrepented vices, those who stood by were justly reminded of the ancient Prophets. When Savonarola, at Florence, threw the whole energy of his religious zeal into burning indignation against the sins of the city, high and low, his sermons read more like Hebrew prophecies than modern homilies....

To any reflecting mind there is no more signal proof that the Bible is really the guiding book of the world's history, than its anticipations, predictions, insight into the wants of men far beyond the age in which it was written....

There can be no reasonable doubt, for example, that Amos foretold the captivity and return of Israel; and Micah the fall of Samaria; and Ezekiel the fall of Jerusalem; and Isaiah the fall of Tyre; and Jeremiah the limits of the Captivity.

ARTHUR PENRHYN STANLEY, D.D., Dean of Westminster, Corresponding Member of the Institut de France, in *History of the Jewish Church,* Vol. I, pp. 393, 402, 405.

Jean Jacques Rousseau, the well-known French rationalist, wrote: "I must confess to you that the majesty of the Scriptures astonishes me; the holiness of the Evangelists speaks to my heart and has such striking characters of truth, and is, moreover, so perfectly inimitable, that if it had been the invention of men, the inventors would be greater than the greatest heroes."

In *Greatest Thoughts About the Bible,* compiled by J. Gilchrist Lawson, p. 141.

The most stubborn fact of human history is the fact that the Bible has been in the world for almost two thousand years, and portions of it for thirty-five hundred years at least, and during this entire time it has accomplished the most unheard-of things. It has maintained an historic standing such as has never been known to another book. It has exerted an influence such as has never been felt from another source. It has set forth moral maxims such as have never been matched by any other volume. It has been the most illuminating volume known to the minds of men. It has not only illuminated the paths of individuals, so that walking in the light of it, they have cried out with David, "Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path," but in every nation to which it has been sent it has dissipated darkness and brought the breaking of the day. That is a stub-

Digitized by Google

born fact, and men must contend with that fact and explain it before they can discredit the Bible by any criticisms hurled against it,...

WM. B. RILEY, D.D., Pastor of the First Baptist Church of Minneapolis, and President of the Northwestern Bible and Missionary Training School, "The Great Divide, or Christ and the Present Crisis," published in *Serving and Waiting,* William L. Pettingill, Editor—Official Organ of the Philadelphia School of the Bible, C. I. Scofield, President—July, 1919.

In an address given a few years before his death, the great London preacher, C. H. Spurgeon, said: "After preaching the gospel for forty years, and after printing the sermons I have preached more than six and thirty years, reaching now to the number of 22,000, in weekly succession, I am fairly entitled to speak about the fullness and the richness of the Bible as a preacher's book. Brethren, it is inexhaustible. No question about freshness will arise if we keep close to the text of the sacred volume.

Serving and Waiting, July, 1919.

2. Did Isaiah and Jesus or Voltaire and Robert Ingersoll prophesy correctly as to the durability of the Bible?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 40:8—The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the word of our God shall stand for ever.

Matthew 24:35—Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away. Jesus.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

In less than a hundred years Christianity will have been swept from existence, and will have passed into history.

VOLTAIRE, as quoted in an address by H. L. Hastings before the Sixteenth Annual Convention of the Massachusetts Young Men's Christian Association, at Spencer, Mass.

In ten years the Bible will not be read.

ROBERT E. INGERSOLL.

In the most solemn moment in the life of *Girard,* disciple of Voltaire, he penned for his "will" that no ecclesiastic, missionary or minister of any sect should ever hold any connection with the college that should bear his name; nor should they trespass within its premises as visitors; but as if there could be morality apart from religion, he willed that the purest principles of morality should be taught. True to their trust, the guardians of such an institution were compelled to adopt the Bible that he scorned as the best book of morals.

DAVID O. MEARS, D.D., "The Deathless Book," in *Greatest Thoughts About the Bible,* compiled by J. Gilchrist Lawson, pp. 136, 137.

....They lead upwards and onwards to the idea that the Scriptures are well called Holy Scriptures; and that, though assailed by camp, by battery, and by mine, they are nevertheless a house builded upon a rock, and that rock impregnable; that the weapon of offense,

Digitized by Google

which shall impair their efficiency for aiding in the redemption of mankind, has not yet been forged; that the Sacred Canon, which it took (perhaps) two thousand years from the accumulations of Moses down to the acceptance of the Apocalypse to construct, is like to wear out the storms and the sunshine of the world, and all the wayward aberrations of humanity, not merely for a term as long, but until time shall be no more.

WILLIAM E. GLADSTONE, *The Impregnable Rock of Holy Scripture.* Revised and Enlarged Edition, p. 7.

PREDICTIONS THAT HAVE FAILED.

Facts about the Circulation of the Bible Compiled from Official Reports

* * *

Here are some facts about the Bible and its circulation,—facts which demonstrate that both Voltaire and Ingersoll were mistaken, and that their predictions have failed completely:—Twenty-one Bible societies are printing the Bible,—one in the United States, two in Great Britain, and eighteen on the European continent.

More copies of the Bible are sold annually than of any other one hundred books combined. Ten millions of Bibles in English are distributed every year. Every year there are printed 21,000,000 Protestant Bibles, Testaments, and portions, in about five hundred languages....

The American Bible Society

The story of the society's work in distributing the Scriptures during the past hundred years, is a fascinating and inspiring one. The following figures, reporting the work of this one society, show.... that Voltaire's *explosion* was but a figment of his own mind; and notwithstanding Ingersoll's statement, the Bible is the most read book in the world today:—

	Copies
First Year	6,410
Twentieth Year	221,694
Fiftieth Year	1,150,528
Eightieth Year	1,750,233
One Hundredth Year	7,150,911

An increase of from six thousand five hundred a year to over seven million a year, is a marvelous record, and one which is an inspiration to all interested in the circulation of God's Holy Word.

Review and Herald Publishing Association, *The Present Truth,* Vol. I, No. 1, Jan. 1, 1917.

Last year's Bible output of the British and Foreign Bible Society was 6,620,024 copies. In the 106 years of its existence that society has issued 220,000,000 copies of the Scriptures and its annual output is steadily rising, last year's being 685,000 copies in excess of the year preceding. Of what other book could anything like this be said? If you pile in a single pyramid all the copies of the Koran since Moha-

Digitized by Google

met's day till now, with all the copies of the Scandinavian Eddas, the Hindu Vedas, the Persian Zend-Avesta, the Buddhist Tripitakas and the Chinese Five Kings, and add to the pile the hundred other most famous books the world has ever known, including the "best sellers" of all ages, the pyramid, contrasted with the thousands of millions of copies of the Bible, would be as an ant-heap to Mount Everest.

Christian Herald, 1912, in *Greatest Thoughts About the Bible,* pp. 27, 28, compiled by J. Gilchrist Lawson, author—*Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians,* etc.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

ANCIENT BABYLONIA.

3. Was there an Old Babylonian Empire many hundred years before the Babylonian Empire of Nebuchadnezzar?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Genesis 10:10—And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The Tigris and Euphrates Valley; the Upper and the Lower Country.—....

The southern part of the valley, the part known as Babylonia or Chaldea, is, like the Delta region of Egypt, an alluvial deposit.... From the old Babylonian libraries (sec. 50) patient scholars are gradually reading the wonderful story of these ancient cities, probably the oldest built by man.... Of all the kings whose names have already been recovered from the monuments we shall here speak only of Sargon I, a Semitic king of Agade, whose reign forms a great landmark in early Babylonian history.

P. V. N. Myers, *General History for Colleges and High Schools*, pp. 30-32.

4. Who founded the Old Babylonian Empire?

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

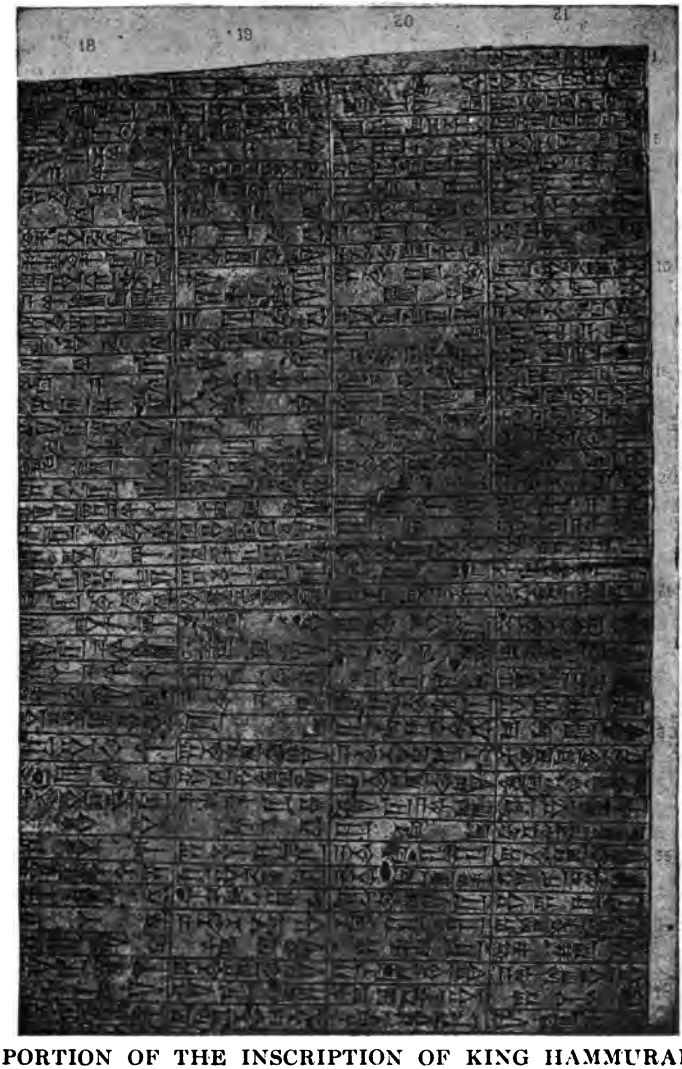
The Rise of Babylon: Hammurabi founds the Old Babylonian Empire (about 2250 B. C.).—From the remotest times the city-states of Babylonia had for enemies the kings of Elam, a country bordering Babylonia in the east, and of which Susa was the capital. For centuries at a time the Elamite kings held the cities of the plain in a state of more or less complete vassalage. Their dominion was finally broken by a king of Babylon, a city which had been gradually rising into prominence, and which was to give to the whole country the name by which it is best known—Babylonia. The name of this king was Hammurabi (about 2250 B. C.). He united under his rule all the cities of Babylonia, and became the true founder of what is known as the Old Babylonian Empire.

Hammurabi has been called the Babylonian Moses, for the reason that he promulgated a code of laws which in some respects is remarkably like the Mosaic code of the Hebrews (sec. 56).

Myers, *General History*, p. 33.

Our chief interest in his name, however, is found in the fact that he was a contemporary of Abraham. His name is identical with that of Amraphel (*Ammurapaltu*) king of Shinar (Babylonia) in Gen.

Digitized by Google



PORTION OF THE INSCRIPTION OF KING HAMMURABI

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

XIV.1, who was one of the four kings of the East that formed a coalition against the rebellious kings of the Westland—the five kings of the cities of the plain.... In December, 1901, and January, 1902, M. J. de Morgan, the indefatigable French archaeologist and excavator, found on the site of the old acropolis of Susa (Shushan of Esther) portions of a broken *stèle* of black diorite, a stone much in favor in the Persian gulf countries for the production of statues and obelisks.... This ancient *stèle* carried on its surface Hammurabi's code of civil laws.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., Professor of Semitic Languages and Literatures in the University of Chicago, *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, pp. 301-303.

5. Was there such a place as Ur of the Chaldees?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Genesis 11:31—And Terah took Abram his son, and Lot the son of Haran his son's son, and Sarai his daughter in law, his son Abram's wife; and they went forth with them from Ur of the Chaldees, to go into the land of Canaan; and they came unto Haran, and dwelt there.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The home of the nativity of Abraham was long a lost city. The excavations of Mr. Taylor, in 1854, and the discovery by Major Rawlinson of important historical documents, have settled beyond reasonable dispute the location of Ur of the Chaldees.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, p. 99.

The discoveries in Egypt, Assyria, and Babylonia have restored to us the inscribed records and monuments of great civilizations which preceded or existed concurrently with the Hebrew people and held contemporary intercourse with them. The history of the Hebrew people as recorded in the Old Testament has been found to be a part, and an important part, of the wider study of Oriental history.... The migration of Abram, apparently a movement of a small tribal family from Ur of the Chaldees, is now shown to be part of a vast heaving of the nations, extending from the banks of the Tigris to the lowlands of Egypt.

W. ST. CHAD BOSCAWEN, Fellow of the Royal Historical Society; Member of the Society of Biblical Archaeology.

6. Is the Bible story of the flood a myth?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Genesis 6:7, 17—And the Lord said,... And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and every thing that is in the earth shall die.

Genesis 7:11, 12, 23, 24—In the sixth hundreth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows

Digitized by Google

of heaven were opened. And the rain was upon the earth forty days and forty nights.... Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark. And the waters prevailed upon the earth an hundred and fifty days.

Matt. 24:37-39—But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

These are the days that we study the Bible with the spade. Our fathers were content to commit the Bible to memory, verse by verse, and the passages they could not understand they believed were beyond human understanding; but the modern scholar, with spade in hand, has gone to the Bible lands to dig up the Bible cities, and as they are uncovered, their very stones cry out the story of the long-forgotten past.....

In the year 1872, after the tablets from the Nineveh library had been taken to the British Museum, George Smith, who in his day was the greatest of Assyrian scholars, took up the fragment of a broken tablet and read these words: I released a dove; it flew about, but finding no resting place, returned.

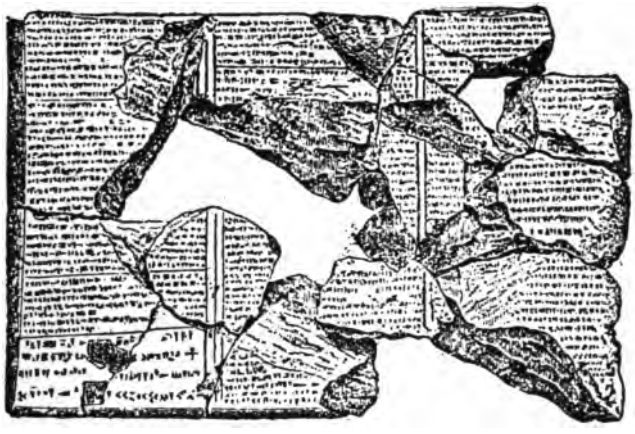
They were familiar words, and so significant that their appearance on the little fragment of clay overcame Mr. Smith; he recognized all that the words meant, and fell senseless to the floor. He had discovered a Babylonian story of the flood!

The discovery was heralded throughout the world, and at once a London paper, the *Daily Telegraph,* provided funds to send Mr. Smith to Nineveh in search of the missing fragments of the tablet. In the chamber of the palace of Assurbanipal, where the library was stored, Mr. Smith found the fragment he most desired. Since then other excavators have discovered other copies of the same story, and at last the narrative has became fairly complete.

The Babylonian and Hebrew stories so closely resemble each other that evidently they are related....

It is often stated that the Hebrews borrowed the story from the Babylonians, or that the Babylonians borrowed it from the Hebrews, yet it can hardly be said that one can borrow that which is one's own. Babylonia was the birthplace of the Hebrews; the scenes of the first two thousand years of their history were along the Euphrates, and the stories of the creation, of the Garden of Eden and of the deluge, belonged to them as much as to the Babylonians. The stories of King Alfred belong not only to the English; they belong also to the English colonists wherever they have gone. Thus Babylonian history and literature, until the days of Abraham, was the only history and literature the Hebrews had. It is then not correct to say that the Hebrews borrowed the story from the Babylonians; it was the story of their

Digitized by Google



A CHALDEAN DELUGE TABLET

"The Babylonians divided their history into two great periods: the one before, the other after, the Flood." ("Babel and Bible," by Frederick Delitzsch, page 42.) And the Babylonians had just ten "kings" before the Flood, just as the Bible has ten antediluvian patriarchs. No reputable scholar now doubts that these accounts of the deluge represent a real historical fact.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

own people, the story they carried with them when they left their native land to cross the desert.

EDGAR J. BANKS, Ph.D., Field Director of the recent Babylonian Expedition of the University of Chicago, *The Bible and the Spade*, pp. 9, 26, 27, 32, 33. Copyright, 1913. The International Committee of Young Men's Christian Associations.

That the great alluvial plain at the mouth of the Euphrates and Tigris was among the countries first occupied by man after the Deluge, is affiirmed by Scripture, and generally allowed by writers upon ancient history....

Besides their correct notions on the subject of creation, the primitive Chaldaeans seem also to have been aware of the general destruction of mankind, on account of their wickedness, by a Flood;... Here again we have a harmony with Scripture of the most remarkable kind—a harmony not confined to the main facts, but reaching even to the minuter points, and one which is altogether most curious and interesting. The Babylonians have not only, in common with the great majority of nations, handed down from age to age the general tradition of the Flood, but they are acquainted with most of the particulars of the occurrence. They know of the divine warning to a single man, the direction to construct a huge ship or ark, the command to take into it a chosen few of mankind only, and to devote the chief space to winged fowl and four-footed beasts of the earth.... They know that the ark rested in Armenia; that those who escaped by means of it, or their descendants, journeyed towards Babylon; that there a tower was begun, but not completed, the building being stopped by divine interposition and a miraculous confusion of tongues. As before, they are not content with the plain truth, but must amplify and embellish it. The size of the ark is exaggerated to an absurdity,...

RAWLINSON, *Five Great Monarchies* (2nd ed., London, 1871), Vol. I, pp. 43, 145, 147.

In **Table—Case A** are fragments of the Assyrian account of the **Creation** and the **Deluge**. According to the translations that have been made, there are many passages in them which remind us of the Bible records, but they are mixed up with the pagan mythology,... The similarities have led some of the German professors and so-called "higher critics" to imagine that the inspired account is derived from the polluted pagan source.... As well might we affirm that the ocean receives her supply of seaweed from the shore by gathering with her waves the dried dead piles of weed that lie upon the beach. The shrivelled weed originally came from the ocean. It was once living and fresh, but exposure to the air and sun and sand have made it dry and putrid, and it only has a slight resemblance to what it once was. So with these ancient records of the past—they too are dead and dry and contaminated with many traces of heathen religion.

During the many centuries which had elapsed between the days of Adam and Moses, God had not been silent. We know that He spoke directly to Enoch, Noah, and Abraham. Because the history of these

Digitized by Google

centuries is compressed into so few chapters in the Bible, in imagination we are inclined to place Abraham quite near the beginning of the world's history, whereas, even if our dates are correct, he was about half way between 4000 B. C. and the Lord's birth at Bethlehem. The Lord said: "Abraham obeyed My voice, and kept My charge, My commandments, My statutes, and My laws." It is therefore certain that the laws given to Moses were not the first God had given. The earliest revelations were very soon corrupted till only traces of the pure truth were left, and it was necessary that God should again make Himself known, and show to Moses what was true and what was false.

ADA R. HABERSHON, *The Bible and the British Museum,* Chapter VII, "The Nineveh Gallery," pp. 37, 38.

Further proof that the Bible version of the flood is correct is found in a recent discovery by Professor H. V. Hilprecht of the University of Pennsylvania, of the fragment of a tablet in the Nippur temple excavations at Nippur, an ancient city of Babylonia, located about fifty miles from Babylon. The supposed date of the tablet is between 2137 and 2005 B. C., which would make it probable that the writer of it had obtained his version of the prophecy either directly from a survivor of the deluge, or from the next generation following....

Referring to this latest discovery of deluge tablets, Bishop Samuel Fallows, as reported in the Chicago American, of March 19, 1910, says: "I read of the discovery with great interest. It is another of the many proofs that are coming to hand that the critics of the accuracy of the Old Testament are wrong." Rev. Melville P. Boynton, in the same paper, said: "We have an additional argument to refute the critics of the accuracy of the Bible. I congratulate Professor Hilprecht on the good work. In the past three years, in fact, archaeological research has consistently brought forth proofs, if these were needed, of the truth of the Old Testament."

J. ELWIN WOODWARD, *Historic and Prophetic Diagram of the World,* pp. 66, 67.

7. Has the prophecy of Noah foretelling the "three great divisions of the human race" been fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Genesis 10:1, 32—Now there are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth: and unto them were sons born after the flood.

These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The second is that miracle of ethnological prophecy by Noah in Gen. 9:26, 27, in which we have foretold in a sublime epitome the three great divisions of the human race, and their ultimate historic destinies. The three great divisions, Hamitic, Shemitic, and Japhetic, are the

Digitized by Google

three ethnic groups into which modern science has divided the human race. The facts of history have fulfilled what was foretold in Genesis four thousand years ago.

REV. DYSON HAGUE, M.A., Vicar of the Church of the Epiphany; Professor of Liturgics, Wycliffe College, Toronto, Ontario, Canada. Published by the Bible Institute of Los Angeles in *The Fundamentals,* Vol. I, p. 286.

The contents of the tenth chapter of Genesis constitute a document of a character altogether extraordinary: for example, in the two following particulars. First, it is without parallel in the world. Nowhere else is there known to us a distinct and detailed endeavor to draw downwards from a single source the multiplication of men in the earth by families, and the distribution of them over the face of the earth..... If such a division actually took place, we might expect to find the traces of it in a threefold division of language, which has an unquestionable relation to race; and, conversely, such a divarication in language proves an early distribution of races or families, from which it took its origin. Without entering into details, it may be observed that the Book of Genesis associates the first distinctions of language with the local dispersion of man; and it is now known that, in days antecedent to the permanent bond of literature, such an association is agreeable not only to probability, but to the ascertained laws of experience. And now we find that comparative philology, dealing at large with the languages of the world, has resolved them into that very threefold division, which the distribution of man according to Genesis 10, into three great branches, anticipates and requires. Here is again an important service, rendered by modern science to belief.

WILLIAM E. GLADSTONE, M.P., *Impregnable Rock of Holy Scripture.* Revised and Enlarged, from *Good Words,* pp. 290-293.—1891.

8. What are some of the archaeological discoveries which have "dealt a terrific blow" to "radical and destructive criticism" of the Bible?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Job 5:12,13.—He disappointeth the devices of the crafty, so that their hands cannot perform their enterprise. He taketh the wise in their own craftiness: and the counsel of the froward is carried headlong.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The greatest recommendation of archeological discovery, as valid evidence in support of Scriptural statements, lies in its casual nature. An inscription is discovered; with great patience and care a translation is made; and now it is found that certain persons and events mentioned tally with similar Scriptural records. But the discovery was wholly unexpected; so that the evidence is absolutely unbiased.

WILBERT W. WHITE, Editor *The Biblical Review,* head of the Bible Teachers' Training School, New York City. Editorial, *The Biblical Review,* p. 5, January, 1918.

Digitized by Google

As we conclude this section of our subject we cannot help remarking that notwithstanding the extensive and long continued excavations in Egypt, which have laid bare so many wholly unknown social and political situations and shattered so many scholarly theories, the authority of the Bible writers as honest and well-informed men has not been, in any degree, harmed. This really is quite remarkable, for the reputation of almost every other ancient author who attempted to depict ancient Egyptian life has been seriously damaged. This is perhaps more significant in showing the unique importance of archeology in Bible study than anything we have yet said. Fifty years ago many pages were filled with the so-called "mistakes" of the Bible writers when they attempted to chronicle Egyptian conditions. To-day those pages are almost, if not wholly, blank.... While the Biblical critic, not the archeologist, must be depended upon chiefly to correct the work of the Biblical critic, yet it cannot be doubted that radical and destructive criticism has been dealt a terrific blow by the excavations of the last sixty years. This has been true, not only of the content of such criticism, but also of its method.

CAMDEN M. COBERN, D.D., Litt.D., in *The Biblical Review*, pp. 20, 37, January, 1918.

In short, from the origin of the higher criticism till this present time the discoveries in the field of archaeology have given it a succession of serious blows. The higher critics were shocked when the passion of the ancient world for writing and the preservation of documents was discovered. They were shocked when primitive Babylonia appeared as the land of Abraham. They were shocked when early Palestine appeared as the land of Joshua and the Judges. They were shocked when Amraphel came back from the grave as a real historical character, bearing his code of laws. They were shocked when the stele of the Pharaoh of the exodus was read, and it was proved that he knew a people called Israel, that they had no settled place of abode, that they were "without grain" for food, and that in these particulars they were quite as they are represented by the Scriptures to have been when they had fled from Egypt into the wilderness. The embarrassment created by these discoveries is manifest in many of the recent writings of the higher critics, in which, however, they still cling heroically to their analysis and their late dating of the Pentateuch and their confidence in the hypothesis of evolution as the key of all history.

FRANKLIN JOHNSON, D.D., LL.D., *The Fundamentals*, Vol. I, pp. 67, 68

Much is made of the historical difficulties and supposed contradictions between the Bible and other authentic records. But the whole tendency of recent investigation, historical and archaeological, is beyond doubt to establish not only the historicity and authenticity, but in many cases the minute accuracy, of the Bible record. This is shown by the vast and accumulating mass of literature by the foremost experts and highest authorities upon the testimony of the monuments, tablets, resurrected cities, mounds, libraries, and other records of ancient Egypt, Babylonia and Assyria, Syria, Palestine, Sinai, as well as the immense amount of corroborative evidence from Asia

Digitized by Google

Minor, Greece, Rome, etc., together with the testimony from the literature, lands, and usages of the peoples of the East who were in touch with the people of Israel. These discoveries have exploded many of the most confidently assumed critical theories, and shown the baselessness of the bold assumptions upon which the critics build their imposing structures of cavil, and have disproved many of their fine-spun philological theories. Since this recent knowledge has removed many once formidable objections, it establishes the principle of vanishing difficulties, and makes possible, if not probable, the complete removal of all such difficulties with greater research and completer knowledge.

EARLE ALBERT ROWELL (A Converted Infidel), *The Bible in the Critics' Den*, pp. 99-101.

The book has yet to be written which will record in detail the struggle by which the assailants of the Bible have been driven out of one position after another by the discoveries of archaeology; but the present volume marks out the lines on which that *magnum opus* will be framed.

SIR ROBERT ANDERSON, K.C.B., LL.D., Preface to *The Bible and the British Museum*, by Ada R. Habershon.

The mighty Past is speaking. God is bringing forth its testimony. Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, have broken the silence of the ages. The mouldering monuments, the buried cities, the sandy deserts, the sculptured rocks, have found a voice. Sinai and Petra, Horeb and Hermon, echo the sacred oracles. Memphis and Tyre, Tadmor and Nineveh, have risen from their graves. The painted papyrus, the pictures walls, the stony tablets, the rusted medals and coins, bring forth their testimony. The ruins, the rivers, the mountains, and the seas cry out, *"Thy word is truth."*

H. GRATTAN GUINNESS, D.D., F.R.A.S., F.R.G.S.

9. What was the fate of Old Babylonia?

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The Old Babylonian Empire eclipsed by the Rising Assyrian Empire.—For more than fifteen hundred years after Hammurabi, Babylon continued to be the political and commercial center of an empire of changing dynasties and shifting frontiers. Meanwhile a Semitic power had been slowly developing in the North. This was the Assyrian Empire, the later heart and center of which was the great city of Nineveh. For a long time Assyria was practically a province of the lower kingdom; but in 728 B. C. Babylonia was conquered by an Assyrian king and passed under Assyrian control.

Myers, *General History*, p. 33.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III.

EGYPT.

10. Did Egypt of the Bible ever exist?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Exodus 1:1, 8—Now these are the names of the children of Israel, which came into Egypt; every man and his household came with Jacob. Now there arose up a new king over Egypt, which knew not Joseph.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

In 1818 Jean Francois Champollion, a French scholar, who before this had busied himself with the study of Coptic and Egyptian geography, began the study of the Rosetta Stone. He assumed that the language of the upper registers must be an older form of the Coptic tongue. By most painstaking comparsion of the characters in the upper registers with the Coptic equivalents of the words in the lower or Greek register, he succeeded in deciphering the long-forgotten writing of ancient Egypt. He published his discovery in 1822. Thus the door to the historical and literary treasures of ancient Egypt was unlocked, and from that time to this the study of Egyptian inscriptions and documents has gone steadily forward.

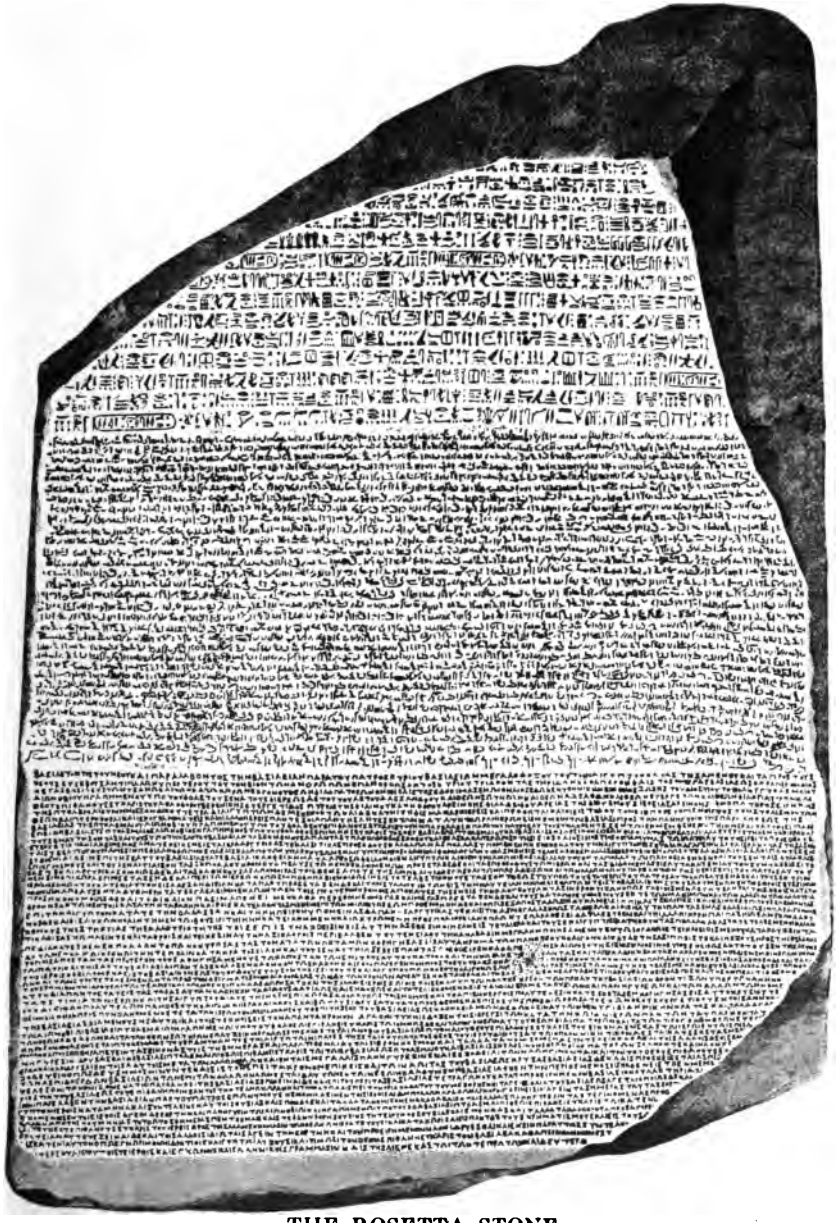
GEORGE A. BARTON, Ph.D., LL.D., Professor of Biblical Literature and Semitic Languages in Bryn Mawr College; Sometime Director of the American School of Oriental Research in Jerusalem, *Archaeology and the Bible,* p. 21.

Down in the beautiful land of the Nile stand some of the most majestic of all ruins, pyramids, sphinxes, temples, and crumbling walls of dead cities, all coming down from unknown times....

This "child of the Nile," Egypt, is fertilized by the alluvia of Central Africa, carried on the bosom of this noble stream and deposited on the fields and gardens of the Nile-dwellers. This entire valley on either side is to-day almost one series of museum specimens.... The great pyramids, and sphinxes, and obelisks all arouse an intense interest in whatever people may have erected these stupendous miracles of engineering skill and construction.... Egypt, wherever mentioned, is no longer simply a name, but the home of a highly civilized and vigorous people,... a people, too, whose fortunes for centuries run parallel to the Hebrews of the Old Testament....

The Egypt Exploration Fund alone has published more than a dozen volumes descriptive of the finds of its excavators since the organization of the society in 1882.... In this mass of material we are finding not only new evidences of the greatness of the old civilization

Digitized by Google



THE ROSETTA STONE

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

of the Nile valley, but also testimony to the accuracy of the records and hints of the Old Testament regarding the character of the ancient Egyptians. In addition to this we are learning that the early records of the Old Testament are replete with traces of an Egyptian coloring, of an Egyptian influence upon the annalist.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, pp. 36, 38, 39, 43.

I can only say now that in some things the Egyptians were never surpassed. Their architecture, as seen in the pyramids and the ruins of temples, was marvellous; while their industrial arts would not be disdained in the 19th century.

JOHN LORD, LL.D., *Beacon Lights of History*, Vol. II, p. 76.

Color, is, we say, an ornament. We dye our dresses, and ornament our furniture. It is an ornament to gratify the eye. But the Egyptians impressed it into a new service. For them, it was a method of recording history. Some parts of their history were written; but when they wanted to elaborate history they painted it. Their colors are immortal, else we could not know of it. We find upon the stucco of their walls their kings holding court, their armies marching out, their craftsmen in the ship-yard, with the ships floating in the dock; and, in fact, we trace all their rites and customs painted in undying colors. The French who went to Egypt with Napoleon said that all the colors were perfect except the greenish-white which is the hardest for us.

WENDELL PHILLIPS, "The Lost Arts," *Speeches and Lectures of Phillips*, Vol. II, p. 376, 377.

The first homes of civilization were Egypt and Chaldea,—the lower valleys of the Nile and the Euphrates....

The Irrigation System.—Before the year 2000 B. C., the Egyptians had learned to supplement the yearly overflow of the Nile by an elaborate irrigation system.... But between 2400 and 2000 B. C. the pharaohs created a wonderful reservoir system. On the one hand, tens of thousands of acres of marsh were drained and made fit for rich cultivation: on the other hand, artificial lakes were built at various places, to collect and hold the surplus water of the yearly inundation. Then, by an intricate network of ditches and "gates" (much like the irrigation ditches of some of our western States to-day), the water was distributed during the dry months as it was needed....

The Industrial Arts.—The skilled artisans included brickworkers, weavers, blacksmiths, goldsmiths, coppersmiths, upholsterers, glass blowers, potters, shoemakers, tailors, armorers, and almost as many other trades as are to be found among us to-day. In many of these occupations, the workers possessed a marvelous dexterity, and were masters of processes that are now unknown....

The most famous Egyptian buildings are the *pyramids*. They were the tombs of kings.... The skill shown in the construction of the pyramids implies a remarkable knowledge of mathematics and of physics for such early times; and their impressive massiveness has always placed them among the wonders of the world.... The largest,

Digitized by Google

and one of the oldest, is known as the Great Pyramid. It is thought to have been built by King *Cheops* more than 3000 years before Christ, and it is by far the largest and most massive building in the world. Its base covers thirteen acres, and it rises 481 feet from the plain. More than two million huge stone blocks went to make it,—more stone than has gone into any other building in the world. Some single blocks weigh over fifty tons; but the edges of the blocks that form the faces are so polished, and so nicely fitted, that the joints can hardly be detected; while the interior chambers, and long, sloping passages between them, are built with such skill that, notwithstanding the immense weight against them, there has been no perceptible settling of the walls in the lapse of five thousand years....

Literature and the Hieroglyphs.—The Egyptians wrote religious books, poems, histories, travels, novels, orations, treatises upon morals, scientific works, geographies, cook-books, catalogues, and collections of fairy stories,...

Science.—The Nile has been called the father of Egyptian science. The frequent need of surveying the land after an inundation had to do with the skill of the early Egyptians in *geometry*. The need of fixing in advance the exact time of the inundation directed attention to the true "year," and so to *astronomy*. Great progress was made in both these studies. We moderns, who learn glibly from books and diagrams the results of this early labor, can hardly understand how difficult was the task of these first scientific observers.

WILLIS MASON WEST, Sometime Professor of History and Head of the Department in the University of Minnesota, *The Ancient World From the Earliest Times to* 800 *A. D.* Revised Edition, pp. 13, 26, 30, 31, 32, 34, 36.

11. Could a history of the Israelites have been written in the time of Moses?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Exodus 24:4—And Moses wrote all the words of the Lord,...

Matthew 8:1-4—When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. And, behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed. And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, show thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

In 1887 some Arabs discovered a wonderful collection of tablets at Tel el-Amarna, an obscure settlement on the east bank of the Nile, about two hundred miles above Cairo and about as far below Thebes. These tablets were of clay, which had been written over with cuneiform inscriptions, such as are found in Babylonia, and then burnt, so as to be indestructible. When at length the inscriptions were deciphered, it appeared that they were a collection of official letters, which had been sent shortly before 1300 B. C. to the last kings of the eighteenth dynasty. There were in all about three hundred letters,...

Digitized by Google

The discovery of these Tel el-Amarna letters came like a flash of lightning upon the scholarly world. In this case the overturning of a few spadefuls of earth let in a flood of light upon the darkest portion of ancient history, and in every way confirmed the Bible story. As an official letter-writer, Rib-addi has had few equals, and he wrote on material which the more it was burned the longer it lasted. Those who think that a history of Israel could not have been written in Moses' time, and that, if written, it could not have been preserved, are reasoning without due knowledge of the facts. Considering the habits of the time, it would have been well nigh a miracle if Moses and his band of associates coming out of Egypt had not left upon imperishable clay tablets a record of the striking events through which they passed.

PROF. GEORGE FREDERICK WRIGHT, D.D., LL.D., Oberlin College, *The Fundamentals,* Vol. I, pp. 303, 306, 307.

This is very important. Whole libraries have been rendered worthless by the new facts brought to light concerning the civilization of these epochs. These were periods in Egypt of great literary activity, while the wealth and "culture" of the people are yet an amazement to those who walk through the ancient cities and view the splendid temples and palaces still remaining unequaled among the architectural wonders of the world. The art found at Tell el Amarna was, in some respects, equal to that which arose in Greece more than seven centuries later. The throne room of an ancient Pharaoh, dug up at Memphis a year or two ago, was comparable, both in size and grandeur of construction, to the palaces now in Windsor and Potsdam.... Books, letters, legal documents, treaties, and in fact almost every kind of literature known to us were being published, many of them in magfiicent editions, especially the religious texts, in the days of Abraham and Moses quite as freely as in the days of David or Ezra. At least six different languages were being studied and used by scholars and diplomats at the very era when, according to the Hebrew memory, Moses was being instructed in "all the wisdom of Egypt."

CAMDEN M. COBERN, D.D., Litt.D., Professor of English Bible and Philosophy of Religion, Allegheny College (Methodist), Author of "The New Archeological Discoveries," and of "Recent Explorations in the Holy Land." *The Biblical Review,* January, 1918, pp. 10, 11.

12. Did the prophecy that the Israelites would be slaves come true?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Genesis 15:13—And he said unto Abram, Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not their's, and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years;

Exodus 1:8,13.—Now there arose up a new king over Egypt, which knew not Joseph. And the Egyptians made the children of Israel to serve with rigour:

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Egypt is divided into the Upper and the Lower sections....

The Gizeh Pyramids are on the western border of the Nile valley, seven miles southwest of Cairo.... To the ethnologist and the anti-

Digitized by Google

quarian, the celebrated Gizeh Museum, situated in a luxuriant garden on the road to the pyramids, is one of the most inviting spots on earth. The large building consists of forty galleries stored with sculptures, tablets, and implements of the most ancient times in endless array. They tell a mute but vivid story of the arts and customs of those times. One room is called the royal gallery, in which are arranged the mummies of the Pharaohs who reigned over Egypt for more than two thousand years. As they lie in their glass cases, they tell the visitor an eloquent story without words, of earthly glory, which vanishes like the flowers of the field that blossom for a moment, and are then gone forever. The most interesting one to me was that of Rameses II, the oppressor of Israel. His lips, teeth, and entire countenance are still preserved, and one can almost hear his words of defiance and cruelty. With what strange sensations does one gaze into the features of a man who acted a prominent part in sacred history previous to the exode!

G. C. Tenney, *Journeys by Land and Sea*, pp. 282, 287, 288, 290.

The possession at Gizeh Museum of the mummy of the Pharaoh of the oppression, Rameses II, and a tablet of the time of Meneptah II, bearing the name "Israel," add great vividness to the bondage of Israel in Egypt.

Ira M. Price, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, p. 293.

Our next excursion shall be to the Bulak Museum....

But the museum at Bulak is not an ordinary museum by any means.... But most interesting of all in this marvelous room are the coffins and the mummies of Sethi I and his son Rameses II,...

We know, indeed, that Rameses II reigned for sixty-seven years, and that he must have been nearly one hundred years old when he died.

Rev. Francis E. Clark, D.D., President of the United Society of Christian Endeavor, *Our Journey Around the World*, pp. 403, 404, 406, 414.

13. Did the enslaved Israelites build for Pharaoh, King of Egypt, Pithom and Raamses?

Bible Evidence.

Exodus 1:11—Therefore they did set over them taskmasters to afflict them with their burdens. And they built for Pharaoh treasure cities, Pithom and Raamses.

Secular Evidence.

In the mound of *Tel-el-Maskhuta,* near *Tel-el-Kebir,* M. Navile, acting for the *Egyptian Exploration Fund* in 1880, found the ruins of **Pithom,** "the treasure city" (Exod. 1:11), which also was called **Succoth** (Exod. 12.37), and was, therefore, the first station on the route of the Exodus. Here were strong treasure houses, with massive walls of sun-baked bricks, some with and some *without* straw (Exod. 5.7). The bricks are stamped with the cartouche of Rameses II., whom we must now identify with the Pharaoh of the oppression.

W. St. Chad Boscawen.

Digitized by Google

But most interesting of all, in 1883, there were uncovered, a short distance east of Bubastis, the remains of vast vaults, which had evidently served as rceptacles for storing grain preparatory to supplying military and other expeditions setting out for Palestine and the far East. Unwittingly, the engineers of the railroad had named the station Rameses. But from the inscriptions that were found it is seen that its original name was Pithom, and its founder was none other than Rameses II., and it proves to be the very place where it is said in the Bible that the children of Israel "built for Pharaoh store-cities, Pithom and Raamses" (Ex. 1:11), when the Egyptians "made their lives bitter with hard bondage, in mortar and in brick."

PROF. GEORGE FREDERICK WRIGHT, D.D., LL.D., Oberlin College, *The Fundamentals,* Vol. I, p. 299.

14. Did the Israelites in bondage have to make bricks without straw?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Exodus 5:10-13—And the taskmasters of the people went out, and their officers, and they spake to the people ,saying, Thus saith Pharaoh, I will not give you straw. Go ye, get you straw where ye can find it: yet not ought of your work shall be diminished. So the people were scattered abroad througout all the land of Egypt to gather stubble instead of straw. And the taskmasters hasted them, saying, Fulfil your works, your daily tasks, as when there was straw.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

On the frontier of Egypt the Land of Goshen has been thoroughly explored and the cities of Raamses and Pithom have been discovered, these being the cities which, according to the Bible, the Israelites built while in bondage (Ex. 1:11). In the corners of the walls of the latter city Villiers Stuart found "bricks without straw," and the present writer found later the same thing in entire walls, these walls being contiguous to others in which straw was used and close to sections of walls where only stubble was used (*cf.* Ex. 5:1-19).

CAMDEN M. COBERN, D.D., Litt.D., in *The Biblical Review,* W. W. White, Editor, p. 16, January, 1918.

It was in conection with the building of these cities that the oppression of the children of Israel reached its climax, when they were compelled (after the straw with which the brick were held together failed) to gather for themselves stubble which should serve the purpose of straw, and finally, when even the stubble failed, to make brick without straw (Ex. 5). Now, as these store pits at Pithom were uncovered by Mr. Petrie, they were found (unlike anything else in Egypt) to be built with *mortar.* Moreover, the lower layers were built of brick which contained straw, while the middle layers were made of brick in which stubble, instead of straw, had been used in their formation, and the upper layers were of brick made without straw. A more perfect circumstantial confirmation of the Bible account could not be imagined. Every point in the confirmation consists of unexpected discoveries. The use of mortar is elsewhere unknown in Ancient Egypt, as is the

Digitized by Google

peculiar succession in the quality of the brick used in the construction of the walls. Thus have all Egyptian explorations shown that the writer of the Pentateuch had such a familiarity with the country, the civilization, and the history of Egypt as could have been obtained only by intimate, personal experience. The leaf which is here given is in its right place. It could not have been inserted except by a participant in the events, or by direct Divine revelation.

PROF. GEORGE FREDERICK WRIGHT, D.D., LL.D., *The Fundamentals*, Vol. I, pp. 299, 300.

15. Was the prophecy that the Israelites would be freed from Egyptian slavery fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Genesis 15:13, 14—And he said unto Abram, Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not their's, and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years; And also that nation, whom they shall serve, will I judge: and afterward shall they come out with great substance.

Exodus 12:40-42—Now the sojourning of the children of Israel, who dwelt in Egypt, was four hundred and thirty years. And it came to pass at the end of the four hundred and thirty years, even the selfsame day it came to pass, that all the hosts of the Lord went out from the land of Egypt. It is a night to be much observed unto the Lord for bringing them out from the land of Egypt: this is that night of the Lord to be observed of all the children of Israel in their generations.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Passover,... *Why instituted*—This feast was instituted by God to commemmorate the deliverance of the Israelites from Egyptian bondage and the sparing of their first-born when the destroying angel smote the first-born of the Egyptians. The deliverance from Egypt was regarded as the starting-point of the Hebrew nation.

WILLIAM SMITH, LL.D., *Bible Dictionary*, Revised and Edited by F. N. and M. A. Peloubet, p. 484.

The bodies of the Pharaoh of the Oppression and the Pharaoh of the Exodus have both been recovered, as well as large fragments of the official records of these reigns. It is thrilling to read the many inscriptions which mention Mer-en-Ptah, the traditional Pharaoh from whom the Israelites escaped.... It is in Merenptah's Hymn of Victory that the reference to the Israelites is found, a reference which stands alone and without parallel in the ancient records.

CAMDEN M. COBERN, D.D., Litt.D., in *The Biblical Review*, pp. 14, 15, January, 1918.

There are moments in the life both of men and of nations, both of the world and of the Church, when vast blessings are gained, vast dangers averted, through our own exertions—by the sword of the conqueror, by the genius of the statesman, by the holiness of the saint. Such, in Jewish history, was the conquest of Palestine by Joshua, the deliverances wrought by Gideon, by Samson, and by David. Such, in

Digitized by Google

Christian history, were the revolutions effected by Clovis, by Charlemagne, by Alfred, by Bernard, and by Luther. But there are moments of still higher interest, of still more solemn feeling, when deliverance is brought about not by any human energy, but by causes beyond our own control. Such, in Christian history, are the raising of the siege of Leyden, and the overthrow of the Armada; and such, above all, was the passage of the Red Sea.

DEAN STANLEY, *History of the Jewish Church,* Vol. I, p. 113.

So the Hebrews went out of Egypt, while the Egyptians wept, and repented that they had treated them so hardly.... They left Egypt in the month Xanthicus, on the fifteenth day of the lunar month, four hundred and thirty years after our forefather Abraham came into Canaan,...

JOSEPHUS, *Works of Josephus,* Vol. I, pp. 192, 193, Translated from original Greek by Wm. Whiston, A.M.

Like the sudden shift of stage scenery the Bible story gives to those few minutes on the bank of the Nile the signifiance of centuries. Perhaps no incident so brief ever meant so much to a family and a nation. And Pharaoh's daughter shines a kindly light forever in the centre of the picture. Without knowing it she was a part of one great movement of the divine will, and a factor in its results. Her high position figures less in her memorial than the spirit of her deed. Her gentleness braved the tragic law of her own house; and her gentleness made her great. In adopting the son of a slave she unshackled a hand that would free two million slaves.... Under her care he grew, and took on the finest culture of his time. The Hebrew nation—the whole world, proud of the sublime man he came to be, is indebted to her for his life, his education and his very name.

REV. THERON BROWN, *Nameless Women of the Bible,* Introduction by Margaret E. Sangster, pp. 21, 22.

16. Did Ezekiel prophesy correctly that Egypt would be the basest of nations and never again be a great nation?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Ezekiel 29:13-16 (589 B. C)—Yet thus saith the Lord God; At the end of forty years will I gather the Egyptians from the people whither they were scattered: And I will bring again the captivity of Egypt, and will cause them to return into the land of Pathros, into the land of their habitation;.... It shall be the basest of the kingdoms; neither shall it exalt itself any more above the nations: for I will diminish them, that they shall no more rule over the nations.... but they shall know that I am the Lord God.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The massive ruins by the Nile bear witness to prophecy fulfilled. When Egypt rivaled Babylon, the word was spoken: "It shall be the basest of the kingdoms; neither shall it exalt itself any more above the nations." Eze. 29:15. It was not utterly to pass, as Babylon,

Digitized by Google

but to continue in inferior state. Thus it came to pass.... Thus the centuries bear testimony to the fulfilment of the prophetic word. The panorama of all human history moves before us in these writings of the prophets. Flinging their "colossal shadows" across the pages of Holy Writ, as Farrar says, we see—

> "The giant forms of empires on their way
> To ruin."

It is no human book that thus from primitive times forecasts the march of history through the ages.

W. A. Spicer, *Our Day in the Light of Prophecy*, pp. 35, 36.

"And I will make the rivers dry, and sell the land into the ***hand of the wicked***: and I will make the land waste, and all that is therein, ***by the hand of strangers***: I the Lord have spoken it." Ezek. 30:12.

Thus in one brief sentence is summed up the whole history of Egypt since the occupation of the first conquerors. Volney calls it a country "of slavery and tyranny." Malte-Brun speaks of "the arbitrary sway of the ruffian masters of Egypt." Much as the Egyptian hated the foreigner and his ways, it seems a poetic punishment that Egypt, the land that oppressed God's people for hundreds of years, should be oppressed in turn by strangers. Egypt has been treated, for two thousand years and more, as she treated her slaves. The hand of the wicked stranger has made Egyptian history for ages, as the prophet declared....

"And there shall be no more a prince from the land of Egypt." Ezek. 29:15; 30:13.

And what has history to say? Assyria and Babylonia have been destroyed as the prophecy said; but this kingdom was not to be destroyed, but degraded, debased, the oppressed land of rapacious tyrants during all the rest of her history. For two milleniums, she has been subject successively to the Persians, the Greeks, the Romans, the Byzantine Greeks, the Saracens, the Turks, the French, and the British. Not once in that time has one of her own princes risen to power....

Suppose the ancient prophets of the Old Testament, in making their predictions concerning Assyria, Babylon, and Egypt, had by any accident transposed their traditions—that we were told Egypt should never be inhabited, but should remain desolate forever, while Babylon was to be degraded, and her people were to continue subjects of a foreign power. How quick the critics would be to bring forward the fact of nonfulfillment of prophecy! But when history teems with facts which attest the accuracy of predictions made, even, as we have seen, when they extend more than two thousand years beyond the time in which even the most rabid critic claims they were written, he shuts his eyes to the facts, and talks learnedly of prophecy's being history written after the event!

How can man, without divine aid, foretell the future for ten years, not to say twice ten centuries? Who, in 1905, dreamed of the revolution in Turkey? Who, in 1900, could have foretold the lightning-like rapidity of the revolution in the most sluggish and cumbersome of all

Digitized by Google

nations—who, in short, could have foreseen a Chinese republic? Who, in July, 1914, foretold the beginning, in a few days, of the world's most awful war? But in the Bible, we have not one instance of such foresight, but hundreds, reaching not ten years into the future, but thousands. If those who foresaw these things were not prophets with divine foresight, those ancient writers are a far greater miracle than we claim for them, and it will tax the acutest ingenuity of the most ingenious critics, whose whole lives are an effort to explain away the truths of the Bible by ingenuity—it will, I say, tax to the utmost all their cautious cunning to explain as guesswork such stupendous foresight.

EARLE ALBERT ROWELL (A Converted Infidel), *The Bible in the Critics' Den*, pp. 114-116.

From about the middle of the fourth century B. C. to the present day no native prince has sat upon the throne of the Pharaohs.

Myers, *General History*, p. 20.

17. Was the prophecy in Isaiah that Egypt would be conquered by Assyria fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 20:4—So shall the king of Assyria lead away the Egyptians prisoners....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The 25th dynasty was a foreign one, consisting of Ethiopians who had conquered Egypt. One of these, Sabaco or So, made an alliance with Hoshea king of Israel; and another, Tirhakah, came ineffectually to the help of Hezekiah. In fact, it was under these Ethiopian rulers that Egypt first came into collision with Assyria.... and Egypt was finally conquered and turned into an Assyrian province by Esar-haddon.

REV. A. H. SAYCE, M.A., Queen's College, Oxford.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV.

DAVID AND SOLOMON.

18. Was the kingdom of David and Solomon a great one?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

I Chronicles 17:3, 7, 8, 16—And it came to pass the same night, that the word of God came to Nathan, saying, Now therefore thus shalt thou say unto my servant David, Thus saith the Lord of hosts, I took thee from the sheepcote, even from following the sheep, that thou shouldest be ruler over my people Israel:.... and have made thee a name like the name of the great men that are in the earth. And David the king came and sat before the Lord, and said, Who am I, O Lord God, and what is mine house, that thou hast brought me hitherto?

I Kings 4:21-23, 25, 29, 31, 32, 34—And Solomon reigned over all kingdoms from the river unto the land of the Philistines, and unto the border of Egypt:... And Solomon's provision for one day was thirty measures of fine flour, and threescore measures of meal, Ten fat oxen, and twenty oxen out of the pastures, and an hundred sheep, beside harts, and roebucks, and fallowdeer, and fatted fowl. And Judah and Israel dwelt safely, every man under his vine and under his fig tree, from Dan even to Beer-sheba, all the days of Solomon. And God gave Solomon wisdom and understanding exceeding much, and largeness of heart, even as the sand that is on the sea shore. For he was wiser than all men;.... and his fame was in all nations round about. And he spake three thousand proverbs: and his songs were a thousand and five. And there came of all people to hear the wisdom of Solomon, from all kings of the earth, which had heard of his wisdom.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The true character of the Jewish kingdom of David and Solomon as one of the Great Oriental Empires, on a par with Chaldaea and Assyria, and only less celebrated than the others from the accident of its being short-lived, has rarely been seized by historians. Milman indeed parallels the architectural glories of Solomon with those of the "older monarchs of Egypt and Assyria" (*History of the Jews*, vol. I. p. 261, 1st edition), and Ewald has one or two similar expressions; but neither writer appears to recognise the real greatness of the Hebrew kingdom. It remained for Dean Stanley, with his greater power for realising the past, to see that David, upon the completion of his conquests, "became a king *on the scale of the great Oriental Sovereigns* of Egypt and Persia," founding "an imperial dominion," and placing himself "on a level with the great potentates of the world," as, for instance, "Rameses or Cyrus." (Stanley in Smith's *Bibl. Dict.* art. DAVID, vol. I. p. 408.)

RAWLINSON, *Five Great Monarchies* (2nd ed., London, 1871), Vol. II, pp. 80, 81.

Digitized by Google

And when the Queen of Sheba heard of the fame of Solomon concerning the name of Jehovah, she came to prove him with hard questions. I. KINGS x:1.... Her eyes looked on Solomon's capital as in a dream. She had never seen the like before. That gorgeous palace, the "House of the Forest of Lebanon," the king's own dwelling-place; the order and lavish abundance of his vast household table with its vessels of gold; the glittering troops of trained servants and cup-bearers; the impressive court audiences, with the ranked ministers in their splendid regalia; the marvellous bridge that spanned the Tyropean from the palace to the Temple; the Temple itself with its imposing white walls, and (so far as a Gentile could enter to look) the exhaustless beauties of its interior; and the solemn rites of the worship of Jehovah with its attendance of rich-robed priests, its music and its prayers—the sight of all the majesty and magnificence held her dumb with amazement and admiration. "There was no more spirit in her," the historian tells us.

REV. THERON BROWN, *Nameless Women of the Bible*, pp. 62, 73, 74.

19. Was the prophecy to David that his son would "build an house" fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

II Samuel 7:8, 12, 13—Now therefore so shalt thou say unto my servant David, Thus saith the Lord of hosts,... And when thy days be fulfilled,... I will set up thy seed after thee,... and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build an house for my name, and I will stablish the throne of his kingdom for ever.

I Kings 6:1, 38—And it came to pass in the four hundred and eightieth year after the children of Israel were come out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon's reign over Israel,.... that he began to build the house of the Lord. And in the eleventh year,.... was the house finished throughout all the parts thereof, and according to all the fashion of it. So was he seven years in building it.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The best artisans employed by Solomon in the construction of the temple at Jerusalem were Phoenicians.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, p. 72.

20. Was the prophecy that Solomon's Temple might be destroyed fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

I Kings ix:1, 2, 3, 6, 7—And it came to pass, when Solomon had finished the building of the house of the Lord,.... That the Lord appeared to Solomon the second time,.... And the Lord said unto him, I have heard thy prayer and thy supplication, that thou hast made before me: I have hallowed this house, which thou hast built, to put my name there for ever;.... But if ye shall at all turn from following me, ye or your children, and will not keep my commandments and my statutes which I have set before you, ... Then will I cut off Israel out of the land which I have given them; and this house, which I have hallowed for my name, will I cast out of my sight; and Israel shall be a proverb and a byword among all people:

Digitized by Google

II Kings 25:8, 9—And in the fifth month, ... which is the nineteenth year of king Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, came Nebuzaradan, captain of the guard, a servant of the king of Babylon, unto Jerusalem: And he burnt the house of the Lord, and the king's house, and all the houses of Jerusalem, and every great man's house burnt he with fire.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

I had the privilege a few years ago, of going down a hundred feet under the walls of Jerusalem and seeing there the massive foundations of Solomon's temple covered over by the debris of many centuries—vast stones fifty feet long and eight or ten feet square, which engineers told me no machinery on earth could lift today. There they remain the colossal memorials of the genius that erected that magnificent temple.

REV. A. B. SIMPSON, D.D., Missionary Alliance at Big Tabernacle, Dec. 13, 1917.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

THE HITTITES—EDOM—MOAB—JERICHO.

21. Were the Hittites a myth?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Judges 3:5—And the children of Israel dwelt among the Canaanites, Hittites, ...

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The Hittites are often mentioned in the Old Testament. Otherwise they were a forgotten people until the second half of the nineteenth century. The lack of extra-biblical testimony to their existence led some scholars about a half-century ago to deny their historicity. They scoffed at the idea of Israel allying herself with such an unhistorical people as the Hittites, as narrated in 2 Kings VII. 6. But those utterances have vanished into thin air. The Hittites were as real a people and power as any that reigned in Asia. . . . They continued as a powerful factor in the affairs of Asia Minor until the downfall of their capital, Carchemish, before the arms of Sargon II, in 717 B. C.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, pp. 75, 76.

A prominent English biblical critic declared not many years ago that an alliance between Egypt and the Hittites was as improbable as would be one at the present time between England and the Choctaws. But, alas for the over-confident critic, recent investigations have shown, not only that such an alliance was natural, but that it actually occurred. . . .

Hittite sculptures and inscriptions are now traced in abundance from Kadesh, in Coele Syria, westward to Lydia, in Asia Minor, and northward to the Black Sea beyond Marsovan. . . . . But enough is known to show that the Hittites exerted considerable influence upon the later civilization which sprung up in Greece and on the western coasts of Asia Minor. It was through them that the emblem of the winged horse made its way into Europe. The mural crown carved upon the head of some of the goddesses at Boghaz-Keui also passed into Grecian sculpture; while the remarkable lions sculptured over the gate at Mycenae are thought to represent Hittite, rather than Babylonian art.

It is impossible to overestimate the value of this testimony in confirmation of the correctness of biblical history. It shows conclusively that the silence of profane historians regarding facts stated by the

Digitized by Google

biblical writers is of small account, in face of direct statements made by the biblical historians.

PROF. GEORGE FREDERICK WRIGHT, D.D., LL.D., *The Fundamentals*, Vol. I, pp. 301, 302, 303.

Some years ago the so-called "higher critics" of the day used to refer to the Bible mentions of this people as one of the evidences of the imagined inaccuracies of the Bible. They themselves knew nothing about the Hittites, therefore the Hittites could not have existed! They have had to give up this point of attack. The Bible has been proved absolutely correct on this subject as on others. The Hittite remains, with the quaint picture writing, "unknown hieroglyphics" as the description upon the monuments calls them, prove the existence of a great nation or group of nations. Other discoveries corroborate the Bible accounts, and show that the Hittites were a powerful people.

ADA R. HABERSHON, *The Bible and the British Museum*, pp. 16, 17.

In 1904 one of the foremost archaelogists of Europe said to me: "I do not believe there ever were such people as the Hittites, and I do not believe 'Kheta' in the Egyptian inscriptions was meant for the Hittites." We will allow that archaeologist to be nameless now.

REV. M. G. KYLE, D.D., LL.D., Egyptologist, Professor of Biblical Archaeology, Xenia Theological Seminary (United Presbyterian), Consulting Editor of the Records of the Past, Washington, D. C., *The Fundamentals*, Vol. I, p. 317.

22. Were the Edomites a myth?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Ezekiel 25:14—And I will lay my vengeance upon Edom by the hand of my people Israel:....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

.... the Edomites, long denied existence in patriarchal times, have been given historical place in the time of Meremptah by the papyrus Anastasia;

REV. M. G. KYLE, D.D., LL.D., Egyptologist, *The Fundamentals*, Vol. I, pp. 327, 328.

23. Was there such a country as Moab?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 16:6—We have heard of the pride of Moab;....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Moab, for some time past in dispute, I identified beyond further controversy at Luxor in 1908, in an inscription of Rameses II., before the time of the Exodus;

REV. M. G. KYLE, D.D., LL.D., Egyptologist, *The Fundamentals*, Vol. I, p. 328.

24. Was there such a person as Mesha, King of Moab?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

2 Kings 3:4—And Mesha king of Moab was a sheepmaster, and rendered unto the king of Israel an hundred thousand lambs, and an hundred thousand rams, with the wool.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE MOABITE STONE
(Of the Ninth Century, B. C.)

Digitized by Google

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

In the year 1868 Rev. F. Klein, of the Church Missionary Society at Jerusalem, found at Dhiban (the biblical Dibon), in Moab, a remarkable stone, since called the Moabite Stone..... On this stone is the record in the Phoenician characters of the wars of Mesha, king of Moab, with Israel. 2 Kings 3:4. It speaks of King Omri and other names of places and persons mentioned in the Bible, and belongs to this exact period of Jewish and Moabite history. The names given on the Moabite Stone, engraved by one who knew them in daily life, are, in nearly every case, identical with those found in the Bible itself, and testify to the wonderful integrity with which the Scriptures have been preserved. "The inscription reads like a leaf taken out of a lost book of Chronicles. The expressions are the same; the names of gods, kings and of towns are the same."—(See Rawlinson's "Historical Illustrations;" *American Cyclopedia;* and *Bibliotheca Sacra,* Oct. 20, 1870. —Ed.)

SMITH'S *Bible Dictionary,* Teachers' Edition, pp. 412, 413.

25. Were the prophecies of Zephaniah and Jeremiah that Moab would be destroyed fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Zephaniah 2:9 (B. C. 630)—Therefore as I live, saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, Surely Moab shall be as Sodom, and the children of Ammon as Gomorrah, even the breeding of nettles, and saltpits, and a perpetual desolation:....

Jeremiah 48:42—And Moab shall be destroyed from being a people, because he hath magnified himself against the Lord.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Josephus mentions the cities between the Arnon and Jabbok as cities of Moab. Thenceforth they were almost lost to view among the Arabians; and for many centuries little was known concerning the region in which they lived..... Seetzen, in 1806, at the risk of his life, shed a new and unexpected light upon it. He found many ruined places still bearing the old names. In 1812 Burckhardt made the same tour from Damascus to Karak, and from that point advanced to Petra. From these and subsequent travelers we learn that the plains are covered with the sites of towns on every eminence or spot suitable for one. The land is capable of rich cultivation.... Denunciations against Moab were made by Balaam, Amos, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and other prophets, who during its highest prosperity foretold that its cities should become desolate without any to dwell in them; and at the present day, while the sites, ruins, and names of many of its ancient cities can be traced, not one of them has been found inhabited by man.

The International Cyclopaedia, Editor in Chief H. T. Peck, Ph.D., L.H.D., Professor in Columbia College; Associate Editors, Selim H. Peabody, Ph.D., LL.D., Late President of the University of Illinois; Charles F. Richardson, A.M., Dartmouth College.—1898. Vol. IX. p. 946.

Digitized by Google

26. Did Jericho ever exist?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Joshua 6:2—And the Lord said unto Joshua, See, I have given into thine hand Jericho, and the king thereof, and the mighty men of valour.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Jericho has now been accurately located by Sellin and the foundations of her walls laid bare;

REV. M. G. KYLE, D.D., LL.D., *The Fundamentals,* Vol. I, p. 327.

The Austrians (1902-1904) successfully excavated the Biblical town of Taanach in northern Palestine, and later than this the famous city of Megiddo was excavated by the German Palestine Society, while in 1907-1909 Jericho's marvelous fortifications were thoroughly uncovered by Dr. Ernest Sellin.

CAMDEN M. COBERN, D.D., Litt.D., in *The Biblical Review,* p. 21.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

ASSYRIA.

27. Was the Assyrian a powerful empire?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

II Kings 19:10, 11 (B. C. 710)—Thus shall ye speak to Hezekiah king of Judah, saying, Let not thy God in whom thou trustest deceive thee, saying, Jerusalem shall not be delivered into the hand of the king of Assyria. Behold, thou hast heard what the kings of Assyria have done to all lands, by destroying them utterly: and shall thou be delivered?

Sennacherib, king of Assyria, to Hezekiah, king of Judah.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

There were seven great monarchs who ruled over Assyria and Babylon who were closely connected with Bible history. They were—

Shalmaneser II., B. C. 860-835.
Tiglath-Pileser III. or **Pul**, B. C. 745-727.
Shalmaneser IV., B. C. 727-722.
Sargon, B. C. 722-705.
Sennacherib, B. C. 705-681.
Esarhaddon, B. C. 681-668.
Ashur-bani-pal, B. C. 668-626.

The monuments of these kings fill this and the Nineveh Gallery and also the Assyrian Saloon and Basement.

ADA R. HABERSHON, *The Bible and the British Museum*, p. 19.

In 745 B. C. Tiglath-Pileser III seized the throne, and established the most powerful empire the world had yet seen, and one which was well organized.

Home and School Reference Work, Vol. I, p. 176.

Such, in its broad and general outlines, was the empire of the Assyrians. It embodied the earliest, simplest, and most crude conception which the human mind forms of a widely extended dominion. It was a "kingdom-empire," like the empires of Solomon, of Nebuchadnezzar, of Chedor-laomer, and probably of Cyaxares, and is the best specimen of its class, being the largest, the longest in duration, and the best known of all such governments that has existed. . . . . Architecture, the only one of the fine arts which is essentially useful, forms their chief glory; . . . The careful finish, the minute detail, . . . reminds us of the Dutch school of painting, . . . With no attempt to idealise or go beyond nature, there is a growing power of depicting things as they are—an increased grace and delicacy of execution; showing that

Digitized by Google

Assyrian art was progressive, not stationery, and giving a promise of still higher excellence, had circumstances permitted its development..... Hence we may fairly assume that the vases, jars, bronzes, glass bottles, carved ornaments in ivory and mother-of-pearl, engraved gems, bells, dishes, ear-rings, arms, working implements, etc., which have been found at Nimrud, Khorsabad, and Koyunjik, are *mainly* the handiwork of the Assyrians..... At any rate the bulk of the ornaments, utensils, etc., may be regarded as native products. These are almost invariably of elegant form, and indicate a considerable knowledge of metallurgy and other arts, as well as a refined taste..... Transparent glass (which, however, was known also in ancient Egypt) is one of these; but the most remarkable of all is the lens discovered at Nimrud, of the use of which as a magnifying agent there is abundant proof.

RAWLINSON, *Five Great Monarchies* (2d ed., London, 1871), Vol. II, pp. 239, 242-244.

Practically nothing was done to further the work done by Rich until 1842, when France sent a consul by the name of P. E. Botta to the city of Mosul, on the upper Tigris River.....

Botta's discoveries aroused the whole archaeological and historical world with enthusiasm. A tremendous impulse was given to the study of the Orient. The French government, highly gratified at the surprising success of its consul, supplied him with ample means for further research. With enthusiastic efforts and energy Botta prosecuted his discoveries until he succeeded in revealing what afterward proved to be the palace of the great Sargon (722-705 B. C.), probably the most magnificent palace the world has ever seen, covering an area of more than twenty-five acres..... Botta secured in these ruins and brought to Europe the first great collection of Assyrian antiquities, which form to-day one of the most highly prized treasures of the Louvre in Paris. Botta, in conjunction with Flandin, an architect, prepared, and the French government published, the results of this expedition in five great folio volumes, entitled *Monument de Ninive*.....

To enter the British Museum in London, the Louvre in Paris, the Royal Museums of Constantinople, or Berlin, the Metropolitan Museum at New York, or the ancient treasure-house of the University of Pennsylvania, is almost equivalent to entering one of the palaces of one of the monarchs of ancient Assyria.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, pp. 45, 47, 48, 20.

28. Is there any "fixed point" by which we can "accurately assign correct dates" to many "important events" in Assyrian history?

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The "**EPONYM CANON**" shown here has been of great service in connection with Assyrian chronology. The eponym was an official of high rank who held office for one year. A careful record of each name was kept, the name of the reigning king was also inscribed in another column, and any great event might be mentioned. In one list we are

Digitized by Google

COLOSSI FROM SARGON'S PALACE AT KHORSABAD
(As they now appear in the Louvre, Paris.)

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

told that during the year of office of an eponym named "Pur-Sagali in the month Sivan (*i. e.* May-June) an eclipse of the sun took place; and recent astronomical calculations prove that an eclipse of the sun, visible at Nineveh, took place on June 15, 763 B. C. With this year as a fixed point we can accurately assign correct dates to all the important events."

ADA R. HABERSHON, *The Bible and the British Museum*, p. 47—Nineveh Gallery.

29. Who solved the problem of "the Babylonian-Assyrian cuneiform" language?

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

CUNEIFORM SECRETS REVEALED

The wedge-writing continued for long ages to be an unsolved mystery....

Oriental scholars in Germany, France, Scandinavia, and other countries had set their wits to solve the wedge-language of old Persia... No very substantial progress was made, however, until a young Englishman, an officer in the Persian army, Henry C. Rawlinson, made a discovery in 1835 in the Zagros Mountains. Here he found a limestone mountain rising out of the plain to a height of 1,700 feet. One side of this mass was almost perpendicular in form. About 350 feet above the base on this perpendicular side, Rawlinson could see a large space which had been carefully hewn off and polished. Upon this prepared surface he could also descry a large bas-relief representing a king, before whom stood a long line of captives bound neck to neck with a rope. Adjacent to this great group were several columns of cuneiform inscriptions.... Rawlinson's perseverance over slippery and dangerous places finally brought him to the narrow ledge at the foot of the inscriptions..... Rawlinson resolved at once to copy these wonderful columns of inscriptions. The narrowness of the ledge, and the disappearance of a part of it by the ravages of time, and the fearful chasm below him of 350 feet, put him in peril. Some of the inscriptions he could copy from the ledge, for others he climbed a ladder, the foot of which was held on the fourteen-inch ledge by an attendant..... For a time he was suspended in a swing in front of the columns of writing. Suffice it to say that only after most painstaking effort and dangerous risks, at intervals during four years, was Rawlinson able to complete the copying of these columns of wedge-writing.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, pp. 56, 57.

The honor of having first correctly read and interpreted a long inscription belongs to Rawlinson.... In 1833 he was sent to Persia with other British officers to assist in the reorganization of the Persian army. Here his attention was attracted by the great Persian inscriptions in the mountains near Hamadan, the ancient Ecbatana, and in the intervals of military duties he copied and studied several of them. He was, in the early stages of his work, quite unaware of the work done by Grotefend and others, but hit independently upon the method followed by Grotefend. Owing to the fact that the inscriptions on which Rawlinson worked were longer than those accessible to Grotefend, and

Digitized by Google

also contained more proper names, Rawlinson attained greater success than any of his predecessors. He did not publish his results, however, until he had become thoroughly familiar with all that others had done. It was not until 1846 that he published a full interpretation of the Persian column of the great Behistun inscription of Darius I.

GEORGE A. BARTON, Ph.D., LL.D., *Archaeology and the Bible*, p. 50.

Prior to 1820 no gleam of light had pierced the thick darkness in which the language of those ancient peoples was hidden. George Friedrich Grotefend was the genius whose patience, divine gift of insight, and great classical learning enabled him to solve the puzzle that had baffled scholars for a century. Even he, however, was only enabled to identify about a dozen alphabetic characters of this previously unknown language and to decipher a few royal titles. He was followed by Burnouf, Lassen, and many more, each making a new advance in the understanding of the language. But it was Henry Rawlinson who, in 1837 and 1839, and in his later contributions, was able to lay before the Royal Asiatic Society such a mass of facts and correct conclusions as to put the mysterious cuneiform into the category of known languages.

CAMDEN M. COBERN, D.D., Litt.D., in *The Biblical Review*, pp. 26, 27, January, 1918.

30. Did Nineveh ever exist as a great city?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Jonah 3:1, 2 (B. C. 862)—And the word of the Lord came unto Jonah the second time, saying, Arise, go unto Nineveh, that great city, and preach unto it the preaching that I bid thee.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

We can now point out, for instance, the site of Nineveh, one of the places to which the kingdom of Israel was carried captive, . . .

Our old Old Testament of the beginning of this century has now become a new Old Testament. . . . Remains of all the principal peoples mentioned in the Old Testament now decorate the cases of our museums, and tons of new material are being gathered in at the end of every season. . . . . It is with a new zest that Bible students now sit down to draw a map, for instance, of the empire of Thothmes III, Rameses II, or Shalmaneser II.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, pp. 65, 291, 295.

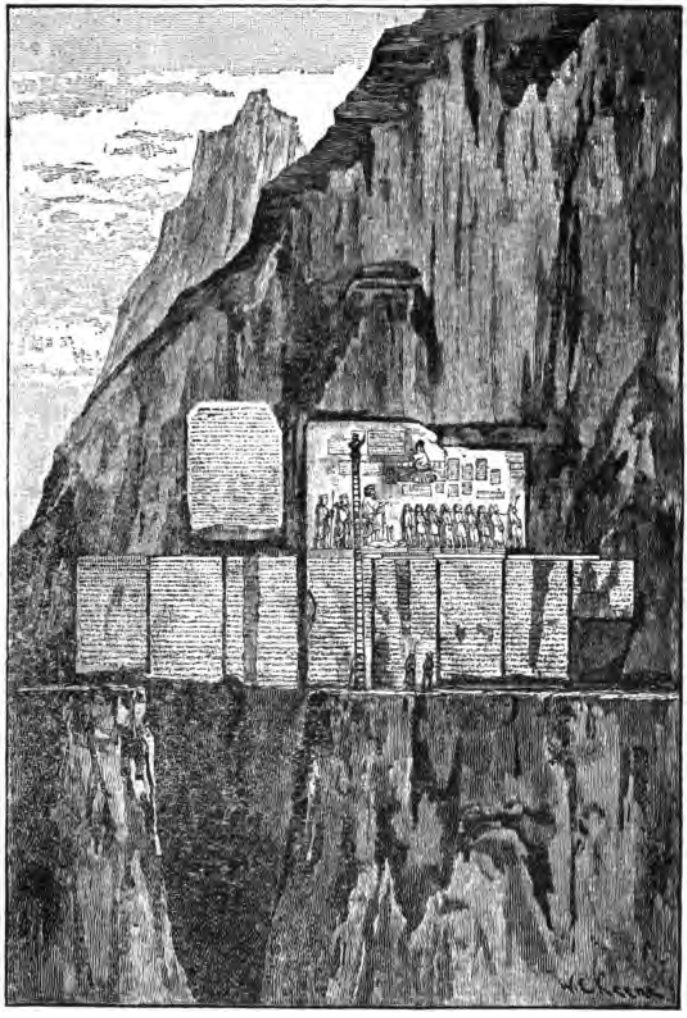
Nineveh, which was made the capital of Assyria after the death of Tigleth-Pileser, became mistress of the Eastern world.

Home and School Reference Work, p. 176.

Asshur-bani-pal. . . . During his reign Assyria enjoyed her Golden Age. He caused a great library to be collected at Nineveh, in which was gathered whatever was of greatest value in the literature of the southern land. But Asshur-bani-pal was also a great warrior. The scenes of his numerous sieges and battles he caused to be sculptured on the walls of his palace at Nineveh. These pictured panels are now in the British Museum. They are a perfect Iliad in stone.

Myers, *General History*, p. 43.

Digitized by Google



THE BEHISTUN ROCK
(Henry C. Raylinson copying the Inscriptions)

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

At Nineveh he discovered in 1853, on the northern part of the mound Kouyunjik, the palace of Ashurbanipal, from one chamber of which he removed the famous library of over twenty thousand tablets.

GEORGE STEPHEN GOODSPEED, Ph.D., Professor of Ancient History in the University of Chicago, *A History of the Babylonians and Assyrians*, p. 19.

31. Did Isaiah prophesy correctly that Damascus would be taken by Tiglath-Pileser of Assyria.

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 8:4—For before the child shall have knowledge to cry, My father, and my mother, the riches of Damascus and the spoil of Samaria shall be taken away before the king of Assyria.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The first Syrian war of Tiglath-Pileser..... In the course of it he reduced to subjection Damascus, which had regained its independence, and was under the government of Rezin;...

RAWLINSON, *Five Great Monarchies* (2nd ed., London, 1871), Vol. II, p. 130.

32. Did Sargon, King of Assyria, conquer Samaria and take the Ten Tribes of Israel captive, in fulfillment of a prophecy by Hosea?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Hosea 13:16 (B. C. 725)—Samaria shall become desolate; for she hath rebelled against her God: they shall fall by the sword:...

II Kings 17:6—In the ninth year of Hoshea the king of Assyria took Samaria, and carried Israel away into Assyria,...

II Kings 17:23 (B. C. 721)—.... So was Israel carried away out of their own land to Assyria unto this day.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The story of Assyria is in the main a story of the Assyrian kings.... Sargon II was a great conqueror. In 722 B. C. he captured Samaria and carried away the most influential classes of the "Ten Tribes" of Israel into captivity (sec. 77).

Myers, *General History*, p. 42.

33. Was there ever such a man as Sennacharib, King of Assyria?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

2 Kings 18:13—Now in the fourteenth year of king Hezekiah did Sennacherib king of Assyria come up against all the fenced cities of Judah, and took them.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

To Sennacherib, the son of Sargon, we must accord the first place of renown among the Assyrian kings. His name, connected as it is with the history of Jerusalem and with the wonderful discoveries among the ruined palaces of Nineveh, has become as familiar as that of Nebuchadnezzar in the story of Babylon. His reign was filled with military expeditions and marked by great building enterprises at Nineveh. Respecting the decoration of this capital, one of his inscriptions says:

Digitized by Google

"I raised again all the edifices of Nineveh, my royal city; I reconstructed all its old streets, and widened those that were too narrow. I made the whole town a city shining like the sun."

In 1845-1851 Layard disentombed the palace of Sennacherib and those of other kings at Nineveh and Calah, and enriched the British Museum with the treasures of his search.

Myers, *General History*, pp. 43, 44.

The British Museum is extremely rich in memorials of this great king.

W. St. Chad Boscawen on Sennacherib.

Sennacherib's records are full of facts regarding his illustrious campaign of 701 B. C., where we find Hezekiah mentioned by name, . . .

Ira M. Price, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, p. 294.

34. Did the death of Sennacherib fulfill a Bible prophecy?

Bible Evidence.

2 Kings 19:5-7. 710 B. C. So the servants of king Hezekiah came to Isaiah. And Isaiah said unto them, Thus shall ye say to your master, Thus saith the Lord, Be not afraid of the words which thou hast heard, with which the servants of the king of Assyria have blasphemed me. Behold, I will send a blast upon him, and he shall hear a rumour, and shall return to his own land; and I will cause him to fall by the sword in his own land.

2 Kings 19:36, 37. 709 B. C. So Sennacherib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nineveh. And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nisroch his god, that Adrammelech and Sharezer his sons smote him with the sword: and they escaped into the land of Armenia. And Esarhaddon his son reigned in his stead.

Secular Evidence.

His son, Sennacherib, who succeeded him on the 12th of Ab, did not possess the military or administrative abilities of his father, and the success of his reign was not commensurate with the vanity of the ruler. He was never crowned at Babylon, which was in a perpetual state of revolt until, in 691 B. C., he shocked the religious and political conscience of Asia by razing the holy city of Babylon to the ground. His campaign against Hezekiah of Judah was as much a failure as his policy in Babylonia, and in his murder by his sons on the 20th of Tebet 681 B. C. both Babylonians and Jews saw the judgment of heaven.

The Encyclopaedia Brittannica, Vol. III, p. 105.

35. Did Nahum and Zephaniah prophesy correctly that Nineveh would be destroyed?

Bible Evidence.

Nahum 3:7, 713 B. C. And it shall come to pass, that all they that look upon thee shall flee from thee, and say, Nineveh is laid waste: . . .

Zephaniah 2:13—And he will stretch out his hand against the north, and destroy Assyria; and will make Nineveh a desolation, and dry like a wilderness.

Digitized by Google

Clay cylinder of Sennacherib, confirming the story of Sennacherib's invasion as recorded in 2 Kings 18:13-15. Sennacherib mentions the exact tribute given by Hezekiah, as recorded in the Scriptures—thirty talents of gold.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

All that we *know* on the subject of the last siege of Nineveh is, that it was conducted by a combined army of Medes and Babylonians, the former commanded by Cyaxares, the latter by Nabopolassar or Nebuchadnezzar, and that it was terminated, when all hope was lost, by the suicide of the Assyrian monarch. This self-immolation of Saracus is related by Abydenus, who almost certainly follows Berosus in this part of his history. We may therefore accept it as a fact about which there ought to be no question.

RAWLINSON, *Five Great Monarchies* (2nd ed., London, 1871), Vol. II, p. 396.

Saracus was the last of the long line of Assyrian kings. For nearly or quite six centuries the Ninevite kings had now lorded it over the East. There was scarcely a state in all Western Asia that during this time had not, in the language of the royal inscriptions, "borne the heavy yoke of their lordship"; scarcely a people that had not suffered their cruel punishments, or tasted the bitterness of enforced exile. But Nineveh was finally taken and sacked by the Medes and Babylonians, and dominion passed away forever from the proud capital (606 B. C.).

Myers, *General History*, p. 43.

The impression made by these ruins has been strikingly described by Layard: [The observer] is now at a loss to give any form to the rude heaps upon which he is gazing. Those of whose works they are the remains, unlike the Roman and the Greek, have left no visible traces of their civilization, or of their arts: their influence has long since passed away. The more he conjectures, the more vague the results appear. The scene around is worthy of the ruin he is contemplating; desolation meets desolation; a feeling of awe succeeds to wonder; for there is nothing to relieve the mind, to lead to hope, or to tell of what has gone by. These huge mounds of Assyria made a deeper impression upon me, gave rise to more serious thought and more earnest reflection, than the temples of Balbec or the theatres of Ionia (Nineveh and its Remains, I. p. 29).

GEORGE STEPHEN GOODSPEED, Ph.D., Professor of Ancient History in the University of Chicago, *A History of the Babylonians and Assyrians*, pp. 14, 15.

36. Was Nineveh destroyed by fire in fulfillment of a prophecy made 107 years before by Nahum?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Nahum 1:1; 3:15—The burden of Nineveh.... There shall the fire devour thee;...

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

However, that Nineveh was actually destroyed by fire is proved from the condition of the slabs and statues found in its ruins, which show the action of intense heat.

The International Cyclopaedia, Vol. I, pp. 829, 830.

A few months ago, when visiting the British Museum with some friends, we found that "spring cleaning" was in full swing..... The

Digitized by Google

glass had been taken from before the great slabs which represent the building of **Sennacherib's** palace, and a workman was kneeling in front of one of them with a bucket of water by his side, and in his hand a scrubbing-brush, which he was using vigorously....When asked if the marks, of which he was trying to get rid, were not caused by fire, he at once agreed but looked surprised at the next question: "Do you know what you are doing? You are trying to wash away the evidence that God's Word has been fulfilled. Those marks of fire are the proof of the fulfillment of prophecy!" Pointing to the book in my hand, in which were pasted passages of Scripture illustrated by the monuments, I showed him the prophecy of Nahum about Nineveh (Nah. 3. 13, 15): "The fire shall devour thy bars... there shall the fire devour thee." This prophecy, uttered many years before the destruction of Nineveh, was actually fulfilled, Nineveh was destroyed by fire, and the evidence was before our eyes. The overseer, who was also in the gallery, was greatly interested in these passages of Scripture; and although the workman continued his scrubbing, we did not think he tried quite so hard to wash the charred stone. He had already found that he could not get out the black stains. When God fulfills His Word, and pours out His threatened judgments, it is vain for man to try and obliterate the traces. Neither the soap of science nor the scrubbing-brush of philanthropy will remove the marks of the fire of God's judgment.

ADA R. HABERSHON, *The Bible and the British Museum*, pp. 34, 35.

37. Was the Bible prophecy that the Assyrian Empire would end fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 14:24, 25 (712 B. C.)—The Lord of hosts hath sworn, saying,... That I will break the Assyrian in my land,...

Ezekiel 31:3, 10-12 (588 B. C.)—Behold, the Assyrian was a cedar in Lebanon with fair branches,... Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Because thou hast lifted up thyself in height, and he hath shot up his top among the thick boughs, and his heart is lifted up in his height; I have therefore delivered him into the hand of the mighty one of the heathen; he shall surely deal with him: I have driven him out for his wickedness. And strangers, the terrible of the nations, have cut him off, and have left him:...

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

In 606 B. C. Nineveh was captured by the combined forces of the Medes and Babylonians, and Assyrian supremacy was at an end.

Home and School Reference Work, Vol. I, p. 176.

If it be borne in mind, in addition to all this, that the buildings of the Assyrians show them to have been well acquainted with the principle of the arch, that they constructed tunnels, aqueducts, and drains, that they knew the use of the pulley, the lever, and the roller, that they understood the arts of inlaying, enamelling, and overlaying with metals, and that they cut gems with the greatest skill and finish, it will be apparent that their civilisation equalled that of almost any ancient

Digitized by Google

country, and that it did not fall immeasureably behind the boasted achievements of the moderns. With much that was barbaric still attaching to them, with a rude and inartifical government, savage passions, a debasing religion, and a general tendency to materialism, they were towards the close of their empire, in all the ordinary arts and appliances of life, very nearly on a par with ourselves; and thus their history furnishes a warning—which the records of nations constantly repeat—that the greatest material prosperity may co-exist with the decline—and herald the downfall—of a kingdom.

RAWLINSON, *Five Great Monarchies* (2nd ed., London, 1871), Vol. II, p. 244.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

MODERN BABYLONIA.

38. Was there ever such a man as Daniel of the Bible?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 2:48—Then the king made Daniel a great man,...

Mathew 24:15—When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:)

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The book may be divided into three parts. The first chapter forms an introduction. The next six chapters, 2-7, give a general view of the progressive history of the powers of the world, and of the principles of the divine government as seen in the events of the life of Daniel. The remainder of the book, chs. 8-12, traces in minuter detail the fortunes of the people of God, as typical of the fortunes of the Church in all ages..... The book exercised a great influence upon the Christian Church. The New Testament incidentally acknowledges each of the characteristic elements of the book, its miracles, Heb. 11:33, 34, its predictions, Matt. 24:15, and its doctrine of angels. Luke 1:19, 26.

The authenticity of the book has been attacked in modern times. (But the evidence, both external and internal, is conclusive as to its genuineness. Rawlinson, in his "Historical Evidences," shows how some historical difficulties that had been brought against the book are solved by the inscription on a cylinder lately found among the ruins of Ur in Chaldea.—ED.)

SMITH'S *Bible Dictionary,* Teachers Edition, p. 136.

Authenticity of the book. Daniel has been furiously assailed. The attack began with Porphery, a pagan, born in Syria, A. D. 233. And it rages still. Only the briefest outline of some of the arguments in support of its genuineness can here be given.

(1) The book claims to have been written by Daniel. In the last six chapters the author uses such phrases as,... "I, Daniel, alone saw the vision;" "I, Daniel, understood by books," etc. These chapters are inseparably bound up with the first six. The pertinent question is, Are these statements true? He would be reckless indeed who would impeach the author's veracity, or charge him with forgery.

(2) Josephus affirms that Alexander the Great was shown the prophecies in Daniel concerning himself by the high priest Jaddua,

Digitized by Google

and the conqueror was so delighted that he offered to confer any favor on the Jews. Alexander antedated Antiochus more than 150 years.

(3) Daniel and his three companions are referred to in I Macc. ii, 49-60, in such a way as to lead us to believe the book was extant when this apocryphal writing was composed.

(4) Ezekiel testifies both to the existence and character of Daniel, XIV, 14,20. .... and no one doubts the authenticity of Ezekiel's book.

(5) Our Lord sets His seal to the reality of Daniel's official character and the truth of his predictions, Matt. XXIV, 15. Christ teaches that this prediction of Daniel still remained to be fulfilled when He uttered the memorable Olivet discourse, i. e., more than a century and a half after the time of Antiochus.

(6) The records of ancient Babylon as deciphered by archeologists harmonize with the statements of the prophet. In many minute particulars Daniel has been vindicated by modern research. The words of M. Lenormant deserve serious attention: "The more the knowledge of the cuneiform texts advances, the more is felt the necessity to revise (correct) the too hasty condemnation of the book of Daniel by the German exegetical school," (La Magie, p. 14).

W. G. Moorehead, D.D., Professor of Old Testament Exegesis, United Presbyterian Theological Seminary, Xenia, Ohio, *Outline Studies in the Books of the Old Testament*, pp. 276-278.

(1) With Enoch, the seventh from Adam, and for three hundred and eight years contemporary with Adam, the voice of prophecy began to be heard through human lips. For so the apostle Jude declares: "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, . . ." Jude 14, ... This sublime and earliest prophecy reaches to the end of time. And through all the intervening ages, other prophecies have covered all the more important events in the great drama of history.

(2) The coming to pass of these great events has been but the response of history to what the prophecies had declared....

(3) It is for the purpose of calling attention to some of these important prophetico-historical lessons, if we may be permitted to coin a word, that this volume is written. And the books of Daniel and .... are chosen for this purpose, because in some respects their prophecies are more direct than are to be found elsewhere upon the prophetic page, and the fulfilments more striking....

No sublimer study can occupy the mind than the study of those books in which He who sees the end from the beginning, looking forward through all the ages, gives, through his inspired prophets, a description of coming events for the benefit of those whose lot it would be to meet them....

There seems to be no prophecy which a person can have so little excuse for misunderstanding as the prophecy of Daniel, especially as relates to its main features. Dealing but sparingly in language that is highly figurative, explaining all the symbols it introduces, locating its events within the rigid confines of prophetic periods, it points out the first advent of the Messiah . . . , and gives so accurately, and so many

Digitized by Google

ages in advance, the outlines of the great events of our world's history, that infidelity stands confounded and dumb before its inspired record.... With thrilling interest we behold to-day the nations marshalling their forces, and pressing forward in the very movements described by the royal seer in the court of Babylon twenty-five hundred years ago,... URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, pp. 3-6.

Although Daniel lived twenty-five hundred years ago, he is a latter-day prophet. His character should be studied, for its development reveals the secret of God's preparation of those who will welcome Christ at His appearing. His prophecies should be understood, for in them is the key which unlocks history to the end of time.....

Years before this, when Egypt was the educational center of the world, God taught Egyptian senators by the mouth of Joseph, a boy no older than Daniel. When Babylon had outgrown the counsels of Heaven, another Hebrew meets the men of the schools. "Can not the wise men show the secret unto the king?"

Before Daniel was the king in his glory; around him stood the very teachers with whom he had studied three years. At this time were exemplified the words of the psalmist: "I have more understanding than all my *teachers;* for Thy testimonies are my meditation. I understand more than the ancients, because I keep Thy precepts."

Nebuchadnezzer was careworn from loss of sleep, and in great anxiety because the dream troubled him; but Daniel was calm, conscious of his connection with God, the King of kings. Daniel now had opportunity to exalt his own wisdom, but he chose rather to give all the glory to God. He plainly told the king that it was beyond the power of man to reveal the dream or give the interpretation; "but there is a God in heaven that revealeth secrets, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days." The king's mind was directed to God alone.

In one night God revealed the history of over twenty-five hundred years, and what the human historian requires volumes to explain is given in fifteen verses.

S. N. HASKELL, *The Story of Daniel the Prophet*, pp. 15, 36, 37.

39. Could Daniel easily have lived as Prime Minister of Babylon, although his name is not "found as yet upon the documents dating from the sixth century B. C."?

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

There will be discussed in this chapter the definite claim of the late Dean Farrar that such a man as Daniel could not have existed because his name even has not been found as yet upon the documents dating from the sixth century B. C. It will be shown, that it is not certain that Daniel, under his new Babylonian name given him by Ashpenaz, the prince of the eunuchs of Nebuchadnezzar, is not mentioned upon the records of Babylon; and, also, that even if it be not mentioned, this affords no presumption against the existence of Daniel, inasmuch as the kinds of records that have come down to us could not have been expected to mention his name..... Moreover, unless some new kind of document should be discovered, or unless the library containing the contract tablets of the bank, or office, at which Daniel trans-

Digitized by Google

acted business, should be unearthed, it is hopeless to expect that his name will ever be found on any document yet to be discovered.....

As to the decrees, especially those of Nebuchadnezzar in chapter four and of Darius in chapter six,.... we might naturally suppose that one or more of them would be discovered. But when we recall the fact that these at best would be but a few out of thousands of the decrees of the kings of Babylon and that not one of their decrees has thus far been unearthed, it is scarcely reasonable, to say the least, to expect that these particular decrees which are mentioned in Daniel should ever be found....

Inasmuch, then, as these inscriptions mention no one filling any of the positions, or performing any of the functions, or doing any of the deeds, which the book of Daniel ascribes to its hero Belteshazzar; how can anyone expect to find in them any mention of Daniel, in either its Hebrew or its Babylonian form?....

What about the numerous governors, judges, generals, priests, wise men, writers, sculptors, architects, and all kinds of famous men, who must have lived during that long period? Who planned and supervised the building of the magnificent canals, and walls, and palaces, and temples of Babylon? Who led the armies, and held in subjection and governed the provinces, and adjudged cases in the high courts of justice, and sat in the king's council? Who were the mothers and wives and queenly daughters of the monarchs, who sat upon the thrones of those mighty empires? Had the kings no friends, no favorites, no adulatory poets or historians, no servile prophets, no sycophantic priests, no obsequious courtiers, who were deemed worthy to have their names inscribed upon these memorials of royal pride and victory; that we should expect to find there the name of Daniel, a Hebrew captive, a citizen of an annihiliated city, a member of a despised and conquered nation, a stranger living on the bounty of the king, an alien, a slave, whose very education was the gift of his master and his elevation dependent on his grace? Let him believe who can. As for me, were the documents multiplied tenfold, I would not expect to find in them any reference to this humble subject of imperious kings.

ROBERT DICK WILSON, Ph.D., D.D., Wm. H. Green Professor of Semitic Languages and Old Testament Criticism, Princeton Theological Seminary, *Studies in the Book of Daniel*, pp. 24, 25, 41, 42.

40. Was there a Babylonian Empire with Nebuchadnezzar her greatest king?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 1:1—In the third year of the reign of Jehoiakim king of Judah came Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon unto Jerusalem, and besieged it.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Nebuchadnezzar is the great monarch of the Babylonian Empire, which, lasting only 88 years—from B. C. 625 to B. C. 538—was for nearly half the time under his sway.

RAWLINSON, *Five Great Monarchies* (2nd ed., London, 1871), Vol. 3, p. 50.

Even Nebuchadnezzar was at one time regarded as a myth. And it seems but yesterday that Amraphel (the Hammurabi of the Inscrip-

Digitized by Google

tions) was rescued from that same category. But these famous kings of ancient Babylon now stand out among the greatest figures of ancient history. And thus one after another of "the assured results" of modern criticism is destroyed by the spade of the explorer.

SIR ROBERT ANDERSON, K.C.B., LL.D., in Preface to *The Bible and the British Museum*, by Ada R. Habershon.

In 626 Assurbanipal died, and in that same year Nabopolassar, the father of the great Nebuchadnezzar, became the King of Babylon. The building of the Babylon so famous in history began with Nabopolassar..... In 606, Nineveh, the old enemy of Babylon, fell, never to rise again. The next year, in 605, Nabopolassar died, and Nebuchadnezzar succeeded him to the throne. He continued the building operations of his father, until Babylon became the greatest city of its age, and surrounded it with walls the like of which no other city has ever seen.

Nebuchadnezzar, or Nebuchadrezzar, as his name should be spelled, was the greatest character in Babylonian history, but about his name so many legends have grown that it is sometimes difficult to learn the facts of his life. Early he married Amuhia, a daughter of the Median king. His military career began while he was still the crown prince, and his father was on the throne. In 605, at the head of the Babylonian army, he defeated the Egyptians in the famous battle of Carchemish, the old Hittite capital, and drove them from Asia. Then Syria and Palestine were added to his future empire. In 597, when he sent his army to Jerusalem, he won the hatred of the Jews by taking Jehoiakin, the King, captive. Eleven years later, in 586, he destroyed the sacred Hebrew city, transported the Jews to Babylon, and brought the Hebrew kingdom to an end. Centuries afterward, even to this day, Jewish mothers teach their children to hate his name. They tell how he forced the exiles to carry heavy bags of sand across the desert to increase their burdens; how he cast Hebrew lads into a fiery furnace and into the lions' den, and how, in punishment for all his wickedness, he became a calf, and for seven years grazed the grass in the fields about the city.....

The walls of the palaces of many of the Assyrian kings were lined with great stone slabs engraved with reliefs and sometimes with the portrait of a king. But in Babylonia stone was difficult to obtain, and sculptures were very rare. Therefore it was useless to hope that Nebuchadnezzar's portrait would be found on his palace walls. However, several decades ago, an Oriental appeared at the Berlin Museum, offering for sale a small cameo engraved with a helmeted head of a Greek type. About the head was an inscription in Greek characters saying that the face was that of Nebuchadnezzar. The museum authorities believed that the cameo was one of the many spurious objects which the Eastern forgers were constantly sending to Europe, yet they took an impression of it, and returned it to its owner. Years later, when the archaelogists could readily distinguish the false from the true, it was recognized that the cameo was genuine, and that it bore the likeness of the great King. Unfortunately, the little stone seal, perhaps the only one to preserve for us his features, appears to have

Digitized by Google

been lost for ever. Its impression shows the face of a beardless young man, intelligent and refined. The eyes are suggestive of the Semitic; the nose is of the Greek type; the lips are thin, the chin prominent; the neck is that of a strong vigorous man. Such was the appearance of the builder of the walls of Babylon.

EDGAR J. BANKS, Ph.D., Field Director of the recent Babylonian Expedition of the University of Chicago, *The Seven Wonders of the Ancient World*, pp. 42-45.

Nebuchadnezzar was the greatest builder the world had ever known. He rebuilt Babylon and filled it with the most wonderful temples and palaces and, above all, the greatest library in existence, in which his own glorious achievements, the creation of the world, the fall of Adam and Eve, the flood and other matters of primeval history were recorded on beautifully pressed bricks in cuneiform characters.

* * *

In recent years archaelogists have unearthed the ruins of Nebuchadnezzar's mighty palace, his great library and the banqueting hall in which Belshazzar feasted.

American Weekly. Section of the *Chicago Herald and Examiner*, August 4, 1918.

Not only the power, but the wisdom also, of Nebuchadnezzar was exceedingly great. The king favored education, and during his reign Babylon was the educational center of the world. Every art and science was taught in the schools of Babylon. The wisdom of the ancients was made known to the students who sat at the feet of her magicians and wise men. They reveled in the study of astronomy and the higher mathematics. They were linguists who could teach the language of every nation.

The king himself was highly educated, for it was he who examined the students on the completion of their course. Babylon was proud of her educational system; she trusted to it for salvation, but it was the cause of her ruin.

"Thy *wisdom* and thy *knowledge*, it hath caused thee to turn away." God Himself speaks, saying: "Hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?" In the Babylonian court this was exemplified. Nebuchadnezzar and his counselors,—the wise men, astrologers, and soothsayers,—on one side, represented the education of the world. Daniel, a youth, not over twenty-one years of age, a Hebrew and a slave, was chosen by God to confound the wisdom of the mighty.

S. N. HASKELL, *The Story of Daniel the Prophet*, pp. 32, 33.

In the days of Babylon, the first universal empire, God gave to its king, the mighty Nebuchadnezzar, a dream which covered the entire course of this world's history from that time to the very end of the world. In one night God unfolded the history of more than twenty-five hundred years. This prophecy is recorded in the second chapter of Daniel.

The meaning of this dream was made known to the king by Daniel, a young Hebrew captive who was one of the king's wise men.

CARLYLE B. HAYNES, *The Return of Jesus*, p. 18—1918.

Digitized by Google

41. Did Daniel truthfully call Nebuchadnezzar, king of Bayblon, the "head of gold"?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 2:27, 31-33, 38—Daniel answered in the presence of the king, and said,... Thou, O king, sawest, and behold a great image....

This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, His legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay..... Thou art this head of gold.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The kingdom of Babylon at this time was the greatest kingdom of the world, as stated by the prophet. God had made Nebuchadnezzar ruler over them all.....

The city of Babylon was one of the wonders of the world. To this day, no other city has reached equal glory. Its kingly palaces and high walls,.... its broad streets, its gates of brass, and many other points of interest, are all recorded by other historians.

G. G. RUPERT, *The Inspired History of the Nations*, pp. 271, 272.

.... Babylon, the city of renown, clothed with such magnificence that inspiration has seen fit to describe it as the head of gold on the world's great representative image.....

Imagine a space (we must imagine it; for no such spot existed before, and has not existed since);—imagine this space containing two hundred and twenty-five square miles,.... imagine this space laid out in a perfect square, watered by the magnificent Euphrates, and surrounded by a wall eighty-seven feet thick and three hundred and fifty feet high, fifteen miles in length on each side, and the great square of the whole area of the city, subdivided into lesser squares by twenty-five streets running from each side of the city, parallel with the opposite walls, and at right angles with each other, and adorned with palaces, porticoes, columns, colonnades, towers, monuments,.... with everything that art could embellish or money and labor produce, to make a spot pleasant to the sight and touch and every bodily sense.

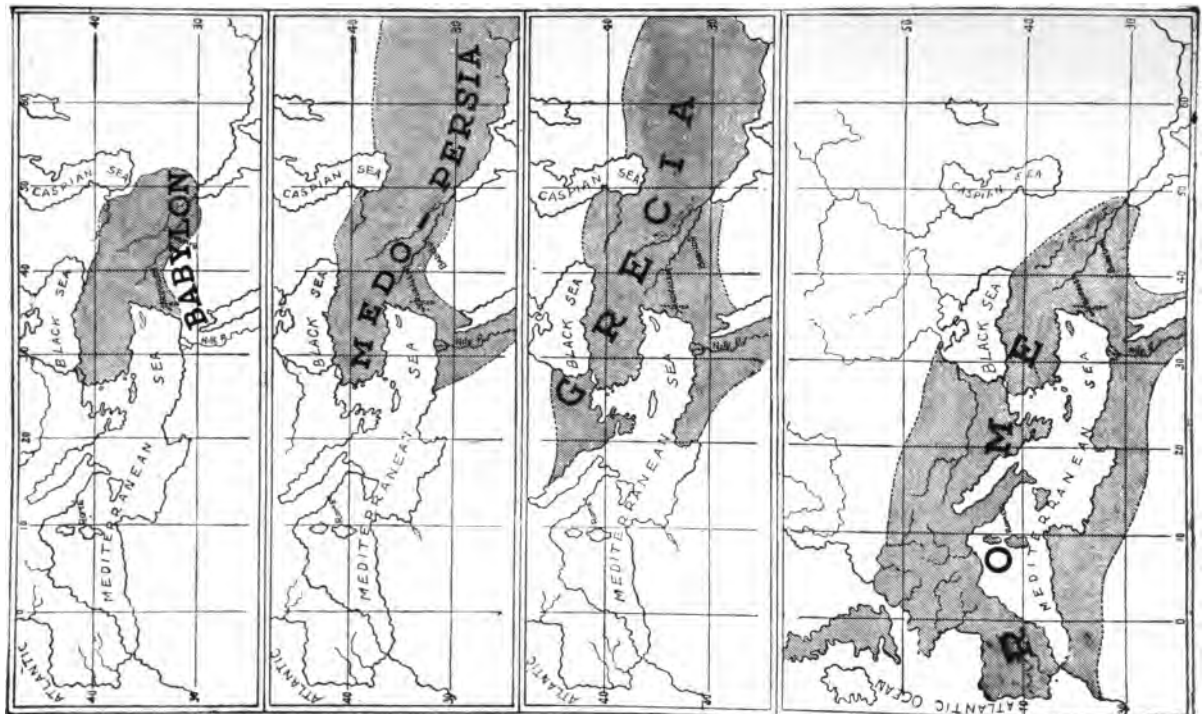
Such was Babylon, glowing in the light of the Syrian sun, and fanned by the blandest zephyrs that ever blew, when Daniel entered to serve the long period of seventy years in captivity. But he was a captive only to political power. He served the Lord, and was spiritually free.

URIAH SMITH, Introduction, *The Story of Daniel the Prophet*, by S. N. Haskell, pp. 10, 11.

Babylonian civilisation differed in many respects from Assyrian, to which however it approached more nearly than to any other known type..... Babylonia seems to have been the source from which Assyria drew her learning, such as it was, her architecture, the main ideas of her mimetic art, her religious notions, her legal forms, and a vast number of her customs and usages. But Babylonia herself, so far as we know, drew her stores from no foreign country. Hers was apparently the genius which excogitated an alphabet—worked out the simpler problems of arithmetic—invented implements for measuring the lapse

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



FOUR KINGDOMS

Digitized by Google

of time—conceived the idea of raising enormous structures with the poorest of all materials, clay—discovered the art of polishing, boring, and engraving gems—reproduced with truthfulness the outlines of human and animal forms—attained to high perfection in textile fabrics—studied with success the motions of the heavenly bodies—conceived of grammar as a science—elaborated a system of law—saw the value of an exact chronology—in almost every branch of science made a beginning, thus rendering it comparatively easy for other nations to proceed with the superstructure. To Babylonia, far more than to Egypt, we owe the art and learning of the Greeks. It was from the east, not from Egypt, that Greece derived her architecture, her sculpture, her science, her philosophy, her mathematical knowledge, in a word, her intellectual life. And Babylon was the source to which the entire stream of eastern civilisation may be traced. It is scarcely too much to say that, but for Babylon, real civilisation might not even yet have dawned upon the earth. Mankind might never have advanced beyond that spurious and false form of it, which in Egypt, India, China, Japan, Mexico, and Peru, contented the aspirations of the species.

RAWLINSON, *Five Great Monarchies* (2nd ed., London, 1871), Vol. 3, pp. 75, 76.

The head of gold represented the Babylonian Empire, the breast and arms of silver the Medo-Persian, the belly and sides of brass the Grecian, the legs and the feet the Roman Empire which followed the Grecian.

REV. JAMES M. GRAY, D.D., "The Bible, Prophecy and the War," in *Good News for Russia*, p. 213.

42. Was King Nebuchadnezzar insane for seven years, eating and living with wild beasts, and afterwards ruler of his dominion?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Dan. 4:28-37—All this came upon the king Nebuchadnezzar.

At the end of twelve months he walked in the palace of the kingdom of Babylon. The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty? While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee. And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will.

The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagles' feathers, and his nails like birds' claws.

And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the most High, and I praised and honoured him that liveth for ever, whose dominion is an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom is from generation to generation:

Digitized by Google

And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and he doeth according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What doest thou?

At the same time my reason returned unto me;.... and I was established in my kingdom, and excellent majesty was added unto me.

Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven, all whose works are truth, and his ways judgment: and those that walk in pride he is able to abase.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The most remarkable circumstance in Nebuchadnezzar's life remains to be noticed. Towards the close of his reign,... a sudden warning was sent him. He dreamt a strange dream; and when he sought to know its meaning, the Prophet Daniel was inspired to tell him that it portended his removal from the kingly office for the space of seven years, in consequence of a curious and very unusual kind of madness. This malady, which is not unknown to physicians, has been termed "Lycanthropy." It consists in the belief that one is not a man but a beast, in the disuse of language, the rejection of all ordinary human food, and sometimes in the loss of the erect posture and a preference for walking on all fours. Within a year of the time that he received the warning, Nebuchadnezzar was smitten. The great king became a wretched maniac. Allowed to indulge in his distempered fancy, he eschewed human habitations, lived in the open air night and day, fed on herbs, disused clothing, and became covered with a rough coat of hair..... The queen most likely held the reins of power and carried on the government in his name. The dream had been interpreted to mean that the lycanthropy would not be permanent; and even the date of recovery had been announced, only with a certain ambiguity. The Babylonians were therefore encouraged to await events, without taking any steps that would have involved them in difficulties if the malady ceased. And their faith and patience met with a reward. After suffering obscuration for the space of seven years, suddenly the king's intellect returned to him. His recovery was received with joy by his Court.... He once more took the government into his own hands,... He was now an old man, and his reign does not seem to have been much prolonged; but "the glory of his kingdom," his "honour and brightness" returned; his last days were as brilliant as his first: his sun set in an unclouded sky, shorn of none of the rays that had given splendour to its noonday.

RAWLINSON, *Five Great Monarchies* (2nd ed., London, 1871) Vol. 3, pp. 60, 61.

First, whether any man can have suffered from such a madness as that attributed to Nebuchadnezzar?

It would be madness in one who is not a specialist in diseases of the mind to attempt to answer this question. After consulting with some of the most eminent specialists in the line of so-called insanity, and the reading of the best works on the subject that could be found in the libraries of Philadelphia, I have come to the conclusion that

Digitized by Google

there is a general agreement among them as to the possibility of such a disease, or form of insanity, as that with which Nebuchadnezzar is said to have suffered. D. H. Tuke, in his *Dictionary of Psychological Medicine,* page 5, says that the complete loss of personal identity, and the conviction of being changed into one of the lower animals, accompanied frequently by a corresponding belief on the part of the beholders, is one of the most remarkable facts which the psychological history of the race reveals.

In the article on Lycanthropy, page 752 of the same dictionary, he cites a well-accredited case of a man who imagined himself to be a wolf, and attempted to act like one, as late as 1852 A. D. The case is described at length by the sufferer's physician, a French specialist of note named Morelle. Dr. Chapin, who was till lately at the head of the Pennsylvania Hospital for the Insane, defines insanity as a "prolonged change of a man's ordinary way of thinking and acting, resulting from disease."

Dr. Chapin says that the best article upon the insanity of Nebuchadnezzar of which he knows is one by D. R. Burrell, M. D., of Binghampton, N. Y., in the *American Journal of Insanity* for April, 1894, pages 493-504. In this article, Dr. Burrell says among other things of interest bearing on our subject, as to which we refer the reader to the volume cited, that the fourth chapter of Daniel contains "one of the most beautiful and accurate descriptions of the premonition, the onset, the course, and the termination, of a case of insanity that is recorded in any language" (p. 504).

> Nothing can be truer to nature and the daily manifestations of the insane than the account of the recovery of the king; the coming out of chaos, of self-absorption; the return of understanding; and then a heart overflowing with thankfulness (*id.,* p. 504).

> Robert Dick Wilson, Ph.D., D.D.; Wm. H. Green Professor of Semitic Languages and Old Testament Criticism. Princeton Theological Seminary. *Studies in the Book of Daniel,* pp. 286, 287.

43. Was Tyre a great city as described in Isaiah?

Bible Evidence.

Isaiah 23:8—Who hath taken this counsel against Tyre, the crowning city, whose merchants are princes, whose traffickers are the honourable of the earth?

Secular Evidence.

From the mother city Tyre and from all her important colonies and trading posts radiated long routes of land travel by which articles were conveyed from the interior of the continents to the Mediterranean seaboard. Thus amber was brought from the Baltic, through the forests of Germany, to the mouth of the river Padus (Po), in Italy; while the tin of the British Isles was, at first, brought across Gaul to the outlets of the Rhone, and there loaded upon the Phoenician ships. The trade with India was carried on by way of the Persian Gulf and the Red Sea, great caravans bearing the burdens from the ports at the heads of these seas across the Arabian and Syrian deserts to the warehouses of Tyre. Other routes led from Phoenicia across the Mesopotamian

Digitized by Google

plains to Armenia, Assyria, Babylonia, Persia, and thence on into the heart of Central Asia.

Myers, *General History*, p. 56.

Before 1000 B. C. the Phoenicians had become the *traders of the world.* **The chief Phoenician cities** were **TYRE** and **SIDON.**

For many centuries, until the attacks by Assyria in the eighth century B. C., these cities were among the most splendid and wealthy in the world. Ezekiel (XXVI, XXVII) describes the grandeur of Tyre in noble poetry that teaches us much regarding Phoenician trade and life:—... *The Phoenicians were the first colonizers on the sea,*—the forerunners of the Greeks and the English..... They worked tin mines in Colchis, in Spain, and finally in Britain, and so made possible the manufacture of bronze on a larger scale than before, to replace stone implements. Probably they first introduced bronze into many parts of Europe.

Willis Mason West, *The Ancient World*, 72, 73.

The thrifty cities of Tyre and Sidon hold a large place in the Old Testament. Though the Phoenicians occupied just a narrow strip of territory between the range of the Lebanon Mountains and the Mediterranean Sea, no other people exerted so potent an influence on Israel in the period of the dual kingdom.

Ira M. Price, Ph. D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, p. 71.

Tyre, the beautiful, the rich, the learned, the mistress of the ocean, the centre of commerce of the world, into which flowed the gold of Tarshish, the horses of Armenia, the stones of Aram, the ivories of Damascus, the flocks of Arabia, the perfumes of Sheba, the slaves of Javan.

Selected Essays of James Darmesteter, p. 90; The Translations from the French by Helen B. Jastrow, Edited by Morris Jastrow, Jr., Professor in the University of Pennsylvania, 1895.

44. Did Ezekiel prophesy correctly that Nebuchadnezzar would conquer ancient Tyre?

Bible Evidence.

Ezekiel 26:7, 11—For thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I will bring upon Tyrus Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon,... he shall slay thy people by the sword,...

Secular Evidence.

Much is said regarding Tyre in Ezekiel:....

Nebuchadnezzar soon took the city and spoiled it..... The remaining inhabitants removed to an island half a mile from shore, and here built a new city.

Earle Albert Rowell (A Converted Infidel), *The Bible in the Critics' Den*, pp. 108, 109.

It is not to be supposed that Tyre would escape from the calamities which were to be sent on the various heathen nations. Tyre was the great commercial centre of the world at that time, as Babylon was the centre of imperial power. Babylon ruled over the land, and Tyre over

Digitized by Google

the sea; ..... Tyre, by its wealth and commerce, gained the supremacy in Phoenicia, although Sidon was an older city, five miles distant. But Tyre was defiled by the worship of Baal and Astarte; it was a city of exceeding dissoluteness. It was not only proud and luxurious, but abominably licentious; it was a city of harlots. And what was to be its fate? It was to be destroyed, and its merchandise was to be scattered. "Howl, ye ships of Tarshish! for your strength is laid waste, so that there is no house, no entering in.... The Lord of Hosts hath purposed it, to stain the pride of glory, and bring to contempt all the honorable of the earth.".....

The destruction of Tyre has been complete. There are no remains of its former grandeur;... Its traffic was transferred to Carthage. Yet how strong must have been a city which took Nebuchadnezzar thirteen years to subdue! It arose from its ashes, but was reduced again by Alexander.

JOHN LORD, LL. D., Author of *"The Old Roman World," "Modern Europe,"* etc. *Beacon Lights of History,* Vol. II, pp. 312, 313.

Nebuchadrezzar, or Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon,.... Nebuchadrezzar seems to have been of Chaldean origin. ..... Tyre revolted in the seventh year of his reign, and was besieged for thirteen years; a contract—tablet dated in his fortieth year shows that at that time it was under Babylonian officials.

The Encyclopaedia Brittannica, Vol. XIX, pp. 331, 332.

45. Was the Bible prophecy that the Jews would be taken as captives from Jerusalem to Babylon fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

II Kings 20:16, 17—

And Isaiah said unto Hezekiah, Hear the word of the Lord.

Behold, the days come, that all that is in thine house, and that which thy fathers have laid up in store unto this day, shall be carried into Babylon: nothing shall be left, saith the Lord.

Daniel 1:1, 2 (607 B. C.)—In the third year of the reign of Jehoiakim king of Judah came Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon unto Jerusalem, and besieged it. And the Lord gave Jehoiakim king of Judah into his hand,.....

II Kings 24:6, 11, 14, 15 (B. C. 610)—So Jehoiakim slept with his fathers: and Jehoiachin his son reigned in his stead.

And Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came against the city, and his servants did besiege it.

And he carried away all Jerusalem,.... none remained, save the poorest sort of the people of the land.

And he carried away Jehoiachin to Babylon, and the king's mother, and the king's wives, and his officers, and the mighty of the land, those carried he into captivity from Jerusalem to Babylon.

II Kings 25:1, 2, 6 (B. C. 593)—And it came to pass.... that Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came,... against Jerusalem,...

And the city was besieged unto the eleventh year of king Zedekiah.

So they took the king, and brought him up to the king of Babylon to Riblah;...

Digitized by Google

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

With a directness characteristic of the sacred writers, Daniel enters at once upon his subject..... Like one conscious of uttering only well-known truth, he proceeds at once to state a variety of particulars by which his accuracy could at once be tested. Thus in the two verses quoted, he states five particulars purporting to be historical facts, such as no writer would be likely to introduce into a fictitious narrative:

(1) That Jehoiakim was king of Judah; (2) That Nebuchadnezzar was king of Babylon; (3) That the latter came against the former; (4) That this was in the third year of Jehoiakim's reign; and (5) That Jehoiakim was given into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar,...

This overthrow of Jerusalem was predicted by Jeremiah, and immediately accomplished, B. C. 606. Jer. 25:8-11. Jeremiah places this captivity in the fourth year of Jehoiakim, Daniel in the third. This seeming discrepancy is explained by the fact that Nebuchadnezzar set out on his expedition near the close of the third year of Jehoiakim, from which point Daniel reckons. But he did not accomplish the subjugation of Jerusalem till about the ninth month of the year following; and from this year Jeremiah reckons. (Prideaux, Vol. I, pp. 99, 100.) Jehoiakim, though bound for the purpose of being taken to Babylon, having humbled himself, was permitted to remain as ruler in Jerusalem, tributary to the king of Babylon.

This was the first time Jerusalem was taken by Nebuchadnezzar. Twice subsequently, the city, having revolted, was captured by the same king,... Of these subsequent overthrows, the first was under Jehoiachin, son of Jehoiakim, B. C. 599, when all the sacred vessels were either taken or destroyed, and the best of the inhabitants, with the king, were led into captivity. The second was under Zedekiah, when the city endured the most formidable siege it ever sustained, except that by Titus, in A. D. 70. During the two years' continuance of this siege, the inhabitants of the city suffered all the horrors of extreme famine. At length the garrison and king, attempting to escape from the city, were captured by the Chaldeans. The sons of the king were slain before his face..... The city and temple were at this time utterly destroyed, and the entire population of the city and country, with the exception of a few husbandmen, were carried captive to Babylon, B. C. 588.

URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, pp. 23, 24, 26.

46. Did Zedekiah, king of Judah, go to Babylon without seeing it, in fulfillment of a prophecy made six years before by Ezekiel?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Ezekiel 12:13 (B. C. 594)—My net also will I spread upon him, and he shall be taken in my snare: and I will bring him to Babylon to the land of the Chaldeans; yet shall he not see it, though he shall die there.

Jeremiah 52:10, 11 (B. C. 588)—And the king of Babylon slew the sons of Zedekiah before his eyes:...

Digitized by Google

Then he put out the eyes of Zedekiah; and the king of Babylon bound him in chains, and carried him to Babylon, and put him in prison till the day of his death.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Jerusalem was made the target of the Babylonian army. It settled down to a long siege. Jeremiah advised capitulation, and consequent mercy and life for its occupants. But the vacillating king, under the control of the rebellious princes, simply echoed their spirit..... He was captured and carried to Riblah, to the presence of the king against whom he had rebelled. True to the Assyrian policy of cruelty meted out to persistent rebels, his own sons were slain before his eyes, his own eyes put out, probably in the manner indicated on Assyrian monuments, by the use of short spears, and he was manacled with fetters and carried a prisoner to Babylon.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, pp. 214, 215.

47. Was there such a character as Belshazzar?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 5:1—Belshazzar the king made a great feast to a thousand of his lords, and drank wine before the thousand.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The four cylinders numbered 53-56 are of great importance to Bible students. "They are inscribed with an account of the rebuilding by **Nabonidus** of the temple of the Moon-god in Ur. The text concludes with a prayer to the Moon-god on behalf of Nabonidus, and of his eldest son **Bel-shar-utsur (Belshazzar)**....

"And as for me, Nabonidus, the king of Babylon, protect thou me from sinning against thine exalted god-head, and grant thou me graciously a long life: and in the heart of Belshazzar, my first-born son, the off-spring of my loins, set the fear of thine exalted godhead, so that he may commit no sin and that he may be satisfied with the fulness of life!"

"When the sceptics first framed their indictment of Daniel, Belshazzar appeared to be a myth. For history testifies that the last king of Babylon was Nabonidus; that he was absent from the capital when Cyrus entered it.... The contradiction between history and Scripture was complete. But the since—deciphered inscriptions have disclosed that Belshazzar was eldest son and heir to Nabonidus, that he was regent in Babylon during his father's absence, and that he was killed the night the Persian army entered the inner city."[2]

It is this inscription which gave an answer to the attacks of the so-called "higher critics." It confirms the accuracy of the Book of Daniel, and explains also the reason why Belshazzar, as a reward to **Daniel**, promised to make him "third ruler in the kingdom." Belshazzar was himself only second.

ADA R. HABERSHON, *The Bible and the British Museum*, pp. 75, 76.

48. Can Belshazzar being called the son of Nebuchadnezzar in the Book of Daniel be "readily accounted for"?

2 Sir Robert Anderson in *The Bible and Modern Criticism*, pp. 136, 137.

Digitized by Google

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 5:2—Belshazzar, while he tasted the wine, commanded to bring the golden and silver vessels which his father Nebuchadnezzar had taken out of the temple which was in Jerusalem;....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

That Belshazzar should have been called son of Nebuchadnezzar is readily accounted for on the supposition that he was his grandson, and there are many things to indicate that Nabonidus married Nebuchadnezzar's daughter, while there is nothing known to the contrary. But if this theory is rejected, there is the natural supposition that in the loose use of terms of relationship common among Oriental people "son" might be applied to one who was simply a successor. In the inscriptions on the monuments of Shalmaneser II., referred to below, Jehu, the *extirpator* of the house of Omri, is called the "son of Omri."

PROF. GEORGE FREDERICK WRIGHT, D.D.,LL.D., *The Fundamentals*, Vol. I, p. 295.

In Dan. 5:2 Nebuchadnezzar is called the father of Belshazzar. This, of course, need only mean grand-father or ancestor.

SMITH'S *Bible Dictionary*—Teacher's Edition, p. 82.

49. How could Belshazzar have been king of Babylon, when "no tablets have been found dated in his reign"?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 5:30—In that night was Belshazzar the king of the Chaldeans slain.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

It is not probable that any such tablets will be found, for his father outlived him and even though Belshazzar were co-king, his father's name would be in the dates. The tablets, however, show that Belshazzar was the commander of the troops, that he was the man of action—his father being a studious recluse—that he was the darling of the people and that the actual administration was in his hands. He was the heir to the throne and even if not formally invested, was the virtual king in the eyes of the people.

PROFESSOR JOSEPH D. WILSON, D.D., Theological Seminary of the Reformed Episcopal Church, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, Author of "Did Daniel write Daniel?"—*The Fundamentals*, Vol. 1, p. 267.

50. Did Daniel by a lion with eagle's wings describe the kingdom and fate of Babylon?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 7:4—The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings: I beheld till the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

At first the lion had eagle's wings, denoting the rapidity with which Babylon extended its conquests under Nebuchadnezzar. At this

Digitized by Google

point in the vision a change had taken place; its wings had been plucked. It no longer flew like an eagle upon its prey. The boldness and spirit of the lion were gone. A man's heart, weak, timorous, and faint, had taken its place. Such was emphatically the case with the nation during the closing years of its history, when it had become enfeebled and effeminate through wealth and luxury.

URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, p. 127.

51. Over one hundred and fifty years before the event, did Isaiah prophesy correctly that Babylon would be conquered?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 13:1, 17, 19 (B. C. 712)—The burden of Babylon, which Isaiah the son of Amoz did see. Behold, I will stir up the Medes against them, which shall not regard silver; and as for gold, they shall not delight in it. And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees' excellency, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah.

Daniel 5:30, 31 (B. C. 538)—In that night was Belshazzar the king of the Chaldeans slain. And Darius the Median took the kingdom, being about threescore and two years old.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

On the fall of Nineveh, B. C. 625, Babylon became not only an independent kingdom, but an empire. The city was taken by surprise B. C. 539, as Jeremiah had prophesied, Jer. 51:31, by Cyrus, under Darius, Dan. 5, as intimated 170 years earlier by Isaiah, Isa. 21:1-9, and, as Jeremiah had also foreshown, Jer. 51:39, during a festival.

SMITH'S *Bible Dictionary*—Teachers Edition, p. 72.

After Nebuchadnezzar the kingdom of Babylon rapidly declined through four reigns. Meantime, Cyrus, who in 553 had overthrown the kingdom of Media and erected the kingdom of Persia on its ruins, had been gradually extending his realm to the Aegean Sea on the west, and to the borders of India on the east. In 538 B. C. Cyrus captured Babylon and overthrew Nabuna'id.

GEORGE A. BARTON, Ph.D.,LL.D, *Archaeology and the Bible*, p. 66.

No. 122 is a "portion of a clay tablet inscribed with the annals of **Nabonidus** king of Babylon, recording the defeat of **Astyages** by **Cyrus**, and the capture and spoiling of **Ecbatana**, his capital city, and **the taking of Babylon**, and the downfall and death of Nabonidus king of Babylon, B. C. 556 to B. C. 538."

ADA R. HABERSHON, *The Bible and the British Museum*, p. 71.

The last words of the first chapter of Daniel are truly significant: "Daniel continued even unto the first year of King Cyrus." In other words, Daniel lived all the days of the Babylonian captivity,—over seventy years,—and had the pleasure of meeting that Cyrus whose name the prophet Isaiah had mentioned nearly two hundred years before he issued his wonderful decree for the deliverance of God's people.

S. N. HASKELL, *The Story of Daniel the Prophet*, p. 30.

Digitized by Google

52. Did Isaiah prophesy correctly, 174 years before Babylon was captured by Cyrus, that he would enter the city through gates?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 45:1 (B. C. 712)—Thus saith the Lord to his anointed, to Cyrus, whose right hand I have holden, to subdue nations before him; and I will loose the loins of kings, to open before him the two leaved gates; and the gates shall not be shut;

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

These two records of the capture of Babylon from two different sources—one might rightfully say from two opposing forces—present a marvellous harmony. They unite in the statement that the city made no resistance to the entrance of the army of Cyrus, neither was there any objection to his immediate assumption of control, unless, in the Nab.—Cyr. Chron., we interpret the guard about the temple of Esagila as a minor siege. On the other hand, the population of the city seems to have welcomed their new conqueror, deliverer, and ruler, as a friend and benefactor.

The popular prejudice aroused by the faithful devotees of Bel and Nebo against Nabonidus for his neglect of worship, gladly transferred their fealty to one who honored and revered the great gods of Babylon. It had likewise become evident that the sway of Cyrus meant for other lands a renewed and continuous political prosperity and a religious liberty unknown in the annals of other rulers. This array of facts freely opened the gates of Babylon to give Cyrus a royal welcome. In view of this direct testimony of two contemporaneous documents, we are forced to the conclusion that the story of Herodotus that Cyrus diverted the waters of the Euphrates from its channel and marched in under the unguarded gates of the river, cannot be true. It may refer to the later capture of Babylon by Darius in 516 B. C.

IRA M. PRICE, Ph.D., *The Monuments and the Old Testament*, pp. 228, 229.

It might well be thought that the broad and lofty walls of the capital would long withstand the assaults of an enemy; the narrative of Herodotus (I. 190, 191) tells how, after a tedious siege, Cyrus, in despair, set about diverting the main channel of the Euphrates and by marching his troops into the city through the river gates, thus laid open, took the defenders by surprise and captured the city. Nothing, however, could be farther from the actual event. Gubaru found friends within the walls who opened the gates soon after his arrival; Babylon fell into the hands of the Persians without a struggle. So deeply had the feuds of parties, ecclesiastical and political, eaten into the body politic that the capital was betrayed by its own citizens. The so-called Cyrus cylinder has perpetuated the memory of this infamy.

GEORGE STEPHEN GOODSPEED, Ph.D., *A History of the Babylonians and Assyrians*, pp. 374, 375.

In this cylinder Cyrus claims to have taken the city "without battle and without fighting."

ADA R. HABERSHON, *The Bible and the British Museum*, p. 80.

Digitized by Google

CLAY CYLINDER OF CYRUS
Describing the Capture of Babylon

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

53. Did the Jews return from Babylon to Jerusalem, in fulfillment of Bible prophecy?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Jer. 29:10—(B. C. 596)—For thus saith the Lord, That after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon I will visit you, and perform my good word toward you, in causing you to return to this place.

Ezra 2:1—Now these are the children of the province that went up out of the captivity, of those which had been carried away, whom Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon had carried away unto Babylon, and came again unto Jerusalem and Judah, every one unto his city;

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Upon the capture of Babylon by the Persian king Cyrus (sec. 70), that monarch permitted the exiles to return to Jerusalem and restore their temple.

Myers, *General History*, p. 51.

54. Did Daniel prophesy, 2418 years before the battle of Waterloo, that Napoleon never could be ruler of Europe?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 2:40, 42, 43 (B. C. 603)—And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron:... And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken. And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Napoleon was an officer of artillery and he showed the effects of it. There was something of the shooting-gallery in his genius. To hammer to pieces the squares, to pulverize regiments, to break lines, to grind up and scatter masses—his way of doing this was to pound, pound, pound unceasingly.....

The eighteenth of June, 1815, he counted more than ever on the artillery, since numbers were in his favor. Wellington had only one hundred sixty-nine; Napoleon two hundred forty cannon.....

How much to blame was Napoleon for the loss of this battle?.... Had Napoleon lost the instinct of victory? Was he seized with a supreme folly at the age of forty-six? Was this titanic charioteer of destiny no more than a great breakneck? We do not at all believe this. His plan of battle was by general confession a masterpiece: To go straight to the center of the allies; to make an opening in the enemy; to cut him in two and push the British half on Hal, and the Prussian half on Tongres; to shatter Wellington and Bleucher; to carry Mont St. Jean; to hurl the German into the Rhine, and the Englishmen into the sea—all this was Napoleon's plan in this engagement..... Victor Hugo was right. The God of heaven had given a command concerning the battle of Waterloo. Napoleon had pitted himself and the legions of France, not against the coalitions of Europe, but against the fiat of the Lord God of battles. He had come into conflict

Digitized by Google

with the Word of prophecy. That Word had said that "the kingdom [Rome]" should be divided, and that the kingdoms which should take its place should stand until the God of heaven should set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed. That Word had said that those kingdoms should not *cleave one to another*. Napoleon had sought to weld them into one. He could not make them cleave together.....

PERCY T. MAGAN, M.D., Dean of the Loma Linda College of Medical Evangelists.

Was it possible that Napoleon should gain this battle? We answer, No. Why? Because of Wellington? Because of Bleucher? No. *Because of God*..... Doubtless the principle and the elements whereon depend the regular gravity of the moral as of the material order, complained.....

Napoleon had been denounced by the Infinite and his downfall was resolved. He bothered God. Waterloo is not a battle; it is the universe changing front.

The shadow of an enormous justice falls across Waterloo. It is the day of destiny. The power above man had granted this day. Therefore the fearful bending of these heads; therefore all these great souls surrendering their swords. Those who had conquered Europe are fallen confounded, having nothing more to say or do, feeling in the shadow of a terrible presence. *Hoc erat fatis.* On this day the perspective of mankind was changed. Waterloo is the hinge of the nineteenth century. The going of the great man was necessary to the coming of the great cycle. The One who is not mocked has taken charge. The panic of the heroes is explained: In the battle of Waterloo there is more than a cloud, there is a meteor—God has passed by.

VICTOR HUGO, *Les Miserables.* (Quoted by Dr. P. T. Magan.)

"They shall not cleave one to another." Examine these seven words closely, for they have proven stronger than all the legions of earth's mightiest armies....

In the eighth century Charlemagne made an attempt to do what God had said should not be done. He tried to bring the kingdoms of Europe under his dominion and unite them in a great Christian empire. But, just as God foretold, he failed. During the sixteenth century a similar attempt was made by Charles V, but he failed. During the latter part of the seventeenth and the first part of the eighteenth centuries Louis XIV tried to bring nearly all Europe under his dominion. But God had said more then twenty centuries before that "they shall not cleave one to another," and Louis XIV failed.

Perhaps the greatest, and what appeared for a time to be the most successful, attempt to bring all the divided parts of the ancient Roman empire under one rule, was made during the first part of the nineteenth century by Napoleon Bonaparte. But all the wisdom of this brilliant military genius, all his shrewdness and ingenuity, all his great knowledge of military tactics, and all the strength of his mighty legions, were not sufficient to break the power of seven short words of Scripture. God had declared, "They shall not cleave one to another," and while he did not realize it, yet it was true that Napoleon was fight-

Digitized by Google

BATTLE OF WATERLOO

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ing not merely against the armies of men, but against the word of God, and his great dream of world empire came to an end at the battle of Waterloo. God had spoken, and "the Scripture cannot be broken." "The word of our God shall stand forever." Isa. 40:8.

CARLYLE B. HAYNES, *The Return of Jesus*, pp. 23, 24.—1917.

55. Were the prophecies in Jeremiah that Babylon would "become heaps", and in Isaiah that owls would dwell there fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Jer. 51:37 (B. C. 595)—And Babylon shall become heaps, a dwelling place for dragons, an astonishment, and an hissing, without an inhabitant.

Isaiah 13:19, 21—And Babylon,.... shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah.... and owls shall dwell there....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

With the conquest of Cyrus commenced the decay of Babylon, which has since been a quarry from which all the tribes in the vicinity have derived the bricks with which they have built their cities. The "great city" has thus emphatically "become heaps." Jer. 51:37.

SMITH'S *Bible Dictionary—Teacher's Edition*, p. 72.

"Babylon shall become heaps," said the prophecy, "and owls shall dwell there." This is what Mr. Layard, the English archeologist, found on his visit in 1845: "Shapeless heaps of rubbish cover for many an acre the face of the land.... On all sides, fragments of glass, marble, pottery, and inscribed brick are mingled with that peculiar nitrous and blanched soil, which, bred from the remains of ancient habitations, checks or destroys vegetation, and renders the site of Babylon a naked and a hideous waste. Owls [which are of a large gray kind, and often found in flocks of nearly a hundred] start from the scanty thickets, and the foul jackal skulks through the furrows."

"Discoveries Among the Ruins of Nineveh and Babylon," chap. 21, p. 413.
W. A. SPICER, *Our Day in the Light of Prophecy*, p. 35.

56. Has the prophecy in Isaiah 13:20 in regard to the Arab and his tent been fulfilled?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isa. 13:19, 20—And Babylon,..shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah. It shall never be inhabited, neither shall it be dwelt in from generation to generation: neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there; neither shall the shepherds make their fold there.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

A ...*sure word of prophecy.*

Dr. Cyrus Hamlin, the venerable missionary and educator, tells the following story. While he was in Constantinople, soon after the Crimean War, a colonel in the Turkish army called to see him and said: "I want to ask you one question. What proof can you give me that the Bible is what you claim it to be—the Word of God?"

Digitized by Google

Dr. Hamlin evaded the question and drew the officer into conversation, during which he learned that his visitor had travelled a great deal, especially in the East in the region of the Euphrates. "Were you ever in Babylon?" asked the doctor. "Yes, and that reminds me of a curious experience I had there," replied the visitor, ...

"I am very fond of sport, and having heard that the ruins of Babylon abounded in game I determined to go there for a week's shooting. Knowing that it was not considered safe for a man to be there except in the company of several others—and money being no object to me—I engaged a sheik with his followers to accompany me for a large sum. We reached Babylon and pitched our tents. A little before sundown I took my gun and strolled out to have a look around. The holes and caverns among the mounds which cover the ruins are infested with game, which, however, is rarely seen except at night. I caught sight of one to two animals in the distance, and then turned my steps toward our encampment, intending to begin my sport as soon as the sun had set. What was my surprise to find the men striking the tents. I went to the sheik and protested most strongly.....

"Nothing I could say, however, would induce him to remain. 'It isn't safe,' he said, 'no mortal flesh dare stay here after sunset. In the dark ghosts, goblins, ghouls, and all sorts of things come out of the holes and caverns, and whoever is found here is taken off by them and becomes one of themselves.' Finding I could not persuade him, I said, 'Well, as it is, I'm paying you more than I ought to, but if you'll stay I'll double it.' 'No,' he said, 'I couldn't stay for all the money in the world. No mortal flesh has ever seen the sun go down on Babylon and lived to tell the tale. But I want to do what is right by you. We'll go off to a place about an hour distant and come back at day-break.' And go they did and my sport had to be given up."

"As soon as he had finished," said Dr. Hamlin, "I took my Bible, and read from the thirteenth chapter of Isaiah: 'And Babylon,.... shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah.... neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there:.... but wild beasts of the desert shall be there: and their houses shall be full of doleful creatures: and owls shall dwell there,....

" 'That's it exactly,' said the Turk when I had finished, 'but that's history you have been reading.' No," answered Dr. Hamlin, "it's prophecy. Come, you're an educated man. You know that the Old Testament was translated into Greek about 300 years before Christ." He acknowledged that it was. "And the Hebrew was given at least 200 years before that?" "Yes." "Well, wasn't this written when Babylon was in its glory, and isn't it prophecy?" "I'm not prepared to give you an answer now," he replied, "I must have time to think it over." "Very well, do so, and come back when you're ready and give me your answer," said Dr. Hamlin. "From that day to this I have never seen him," continued the doctor, "but what an unexpected testimony to the truth of the Bible in regard to the fulfillment of prophecy did that Turkish officer give!"

D. L. Moody, *One Thousand and One Thoughts From My Library*, pp. 369-371.

Digitized by Google

57. Has a prophecy in Jeremiah about the stones of Babylon been fulfilled in a wonderful way?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Jeremiah 51:26 (595 B. C.)—And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but thou shalt be desolate for ever, saith the Lord.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

"There is one fact," says Mr. Rassam, "connected with the destruction of Babylon and the marvelous fulfillment of prophecy, which struck me more than anything else, which fact seems never to have been noticed by any traveler; and that is the nonexistence, in the several modern buildings in the neighborhood of Babylon, of any sign of stone which had been dug up from its ancient ruins. It seems that in digging for old materials, the Arabs used the bricks for building purposes, but always burnt the stone thus discovered for lime, which fact wonderfully fulfills the divine words of Jeremiah, namely, 'And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but thou shalt be desolate forever, saith the Lord.' "....

Why have not the infidels, whether in the church or out, who are so eager to disprove God's word, gone and inhabited Babylon? God's very words on multiplied millions of Bible pages stand a challenge to them to prove that the verdict passed on Babylon is untrue. But despite the pratings of those who say prophecy is history written after the event, no one has ever yet claimed that this prediction was written in this century; yet if their contention be true, the prophecy of the desolation of Assyria and Babylonia must have been written in recent years.

EARL ALBERT ROWELL (A Converted Infidel), *The Bible in the Critics' Den*, pp. 111, 112.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII.

MEDO-PERSIA

58. Was Medo-Persia a great country?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Dan. 8:1, 4, 20—In the third year of the reign of king Belshazzar a vision appeared unto me, even unto me Daniel,.... I saw the ram pushing westward, and northward, and southward; so that no beasts might stand before him, neither was there any that could deliver out of his hand; but he did according to his will, and became great. The ram which thou sawest having two horns are the kings of Media and Persia.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The glory of the New Babylonian Empire passed away with Nebuchadnezzar. To the east of the valley of the Tigris and Euphrates there had been growing up an Aryan kingdom, the Medo-Persian, which at the time now reached by us had become a great imperial power. At the head of this new empire was Cyrus, a strong, energetic, and ambitious sovereign....

Myers, *General History*, p. 48.

The career of Cyrus is one of the marvels of antiquity.... With consummate statesmanship the young king united all elements, inspired them with a common spirit, and out of a kingdom in which tribes and peoples had been joined in loose confederation about a common overlord, he built the solid foundations of the Medo-Persian Empire.

GEORGE STEPHEN GOODSPEED, Ph.D., Professor of Ancient History, Chicago University. *A History of the Babylonians and Assyrians*, p. 369.

With the exception of the Chinese empire,.... all the great kingdoms which we know to have existed in Ancient Asia were, in Darius's time, blended with the Persian. The northern Indians, the Assyrians, the Syrians, the Babylonians, the Chaldees, the Phoenicians, the nations of Palestine, the Armenians, the Bactrians, the Lydians, the Phrygians, the Parthians, and the Medes—all obeyed the sceptre of the Great King; the Medes standing next to the native Persians in honor, and the empire being frequently spoken of as that of the Medes, or that of the Medes and Persians. Egypt and Cyrene were Persian provinces; the Greek colonists in Asia Minor and the islands of the Aegean were Darius's subjects; and their gallant but unsuccessful attempts to throw off the Persian yoke had only served to rivet it more strongly, and to increase the general belief that the Greeks could not stand before the

Digitized by Google

Persians in a field of battle. Darius's Scythian war, though unsuccessful in its immediate object, had brought about the subjugation of Thrace and the submission of Macedonia. From the Indus to the Peneus, all was his.

CREASY'S *The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World*, p. 14.

Daniel was transported to the river Ulai, by the side of which stood a ram having two horns, one higher than the other, and the higher came up last. In his previous vision the second kingdom had been represented by a bear which raised itself on one side and had three ribs in its mouth. Both symbols apply to the double nature of the kingdom of the Medes and Persians, but the uneven horns of the ram give a more specific description; for while the Median kingdom was the older of the two, the Persian excelled it in strength, and its position in history must be attributed to the line of Persian kings which began with Cyrus the Great. The definiteness with which this symbol is interpreted is an illustration of the fact that the Scriptures are their own best commentaries. Said the angel, "The ram which thou sawest having two horns are the kings of Media and Persia."

As the ram pushed westward, northward, and southward, and no beast could stand before it, so the Medo-Persian empire extended its dominion in these directions. At the fall of Babylon one hundred and twenty provinces recognized the authority of Cyrus and Darius. These were held in subjection, and others added, so that in the time of the Ahasuerus of Esther, the kingdom controlled one hundred and twenty-seven provinces, extending from India on the east to the Mediterranean on the west, and from the Caspian Sea to Ethiopia. It was then called a glorious kingdom, and the monarch was spoken of as "his excellent majesty."

S. N. HASKELL, *The Story of Daniel the Prophet*, pp. 120, 121.

This huge empire contained about seventy-five million people. Its only civilized neighbors were India and Greece..... The eastern and western frontiers were farther apart than Washington and San Francisco. The territory included some two million square miles.

WILLIS MASON WEST, *The Ancient World*, p. 85.

59. Did Daniel by a bear prophesy the Kingdom of Medo-Persia?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 7:5—And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it: and they said thus unto it, Arise, devour much flesh.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

It is allowed on all hands, that the four beasts in Daniel's vision in the first year of Belshazzar correspond exactly to the four empires represented in the image exhibited to Nebuchadnezzar.... The kingdom then, which was to succeed Nebuchadnezzar's, was not only to be inferior to it, but was to be compounded of two parts, the one stronger than the other. The symbol already suggests the Medo-Persian Empire.

* * *

Digitized by Google

The second beast, the bear, corresponds with the solid, heavy chest of Nebuchadnezzar's statue. The two-fold division and the relative strength of the two sides, the one stronger than the other, recur in this symbol also, in that the bear *is raised up on one side,* ready to use the arm in which its chief strength lies. It lifts itself up heavily, in contrast with the winged rapidity of the Chaldaean or Babylonian conquests. The *three ribs in its mouth* correspond accurately to the three kingdoms which the Medo-Persian empire swallowed up, the Lydian, Babylonian, Egyptian. It is bidden, *Arise, devour much flesh,* in conformity with the greedy, "all-eating," character of the animal. Waste of human life was a characteristic of the Persian Empire in its heavy aggressiveness. Heaviness was, after Cyrus, the characteristic of its wars.

It never moved, except in ponderous masses, avalanches, precipitated upon its enemy, sufficient to overwhelm him, if they could have been discharged at once, or had there been any one commanding mind to direct them. Like Attila or Timour, they wielded vast masses of human strength on their enemies; their armies varied from 300,000 on slighter expeditions to a million.

Rev. E. B. Pusey, D.D., Regius Professor of Hebrew and Canon of Christ Church. Delivered in the Divinity School of the University of Oxford. *Daniel the Prophet*—Second Edition, Fifth Thousand, pp. 65-67, 72, 73.

As in the great image of chapter 2, so in this series of symbols a marked deterioration will be noticed as we descend from one kingdom to another. The silver of the breast and arms was inferior to the gold of the head. The bear was inferior to the lion. Medo-Persia fell short of Babylon in wealth and magnificence, and the brilliancy of its career..... The three ribs perhaps signify the three provinces of Babylon, Lydia, and Egypt, which were especially ground down and oppressed by this power..... The character of the power is well represented by a bear. The Medes and Persians were cruel and rapacious, robbers and spoilers of the people.... this kingdom dated from the overthrow of Babylon by Cyrus, B. C. 538, and continued to the battle of Arbela, B. C. 331, a period of 207 years.

Uriah Smith, *Daniel and the Revelation,* pp. 127, 128.

60. Did Daniel prophesy the reigns of Cambyses, Smerdis, and Darius Hystaspes, kings of Medo-Persia after Cyrus?

Bible Evidence.

Dan. 11:2 (534 B. C.)—And now will I show thee the truth. Behold, there shall stand up yet three kings in Persia;....

Secular Evidence.

Reign of Cambyses (529-522 B. C.)—Cyrus was followed by his son Cambyses.

Myers, *General History,* p. 60.

Nos. 306-308 are dated in the reign of **Smerdis** (or Barzia), who usurped the throne for a few months, B. C. 521. Darius the Great records on the Behistun rock the names of five pretenders, of which

Digitized by Google

Smerdis is one. Casts of these inscriptions are shown in **Wall-Case 20,** Nos. 208-12 (see p. 65). Nos. 309-331 are dated in the reign of **Darius the Great** (Darius Hystaspes) from B. C. 521 to B. C. 485.

ADA R. HABERSHON, *The Bible and the British Museum,* p. 83.

Reign of Darius I (521-484 B. C.)—The Persian nobles soon rescued the scepter from the grasp of the usurper, and their leader, Darius, took the throne.

Myers, *General History,* p. 61.

61. Did Daniel prophesy Xerxes, "far richer than them all," as successor to Darius Hystaspes?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Dan. 11:2—And now will I show thee the truth. Behold, there shall stand up yet three kings in Persia; and the fourth shall be far richer than they all: and by his strength through his riches he shall stir up all against the realm of Grecia.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

History.—The three kings following Cyrus were (1) Cambyses, (2) Smerdis, (3) Darius; the fourth, Xerxes, was "far richer than they all." He had the treasures of his father, Darius, who was called the "merchant" or "hoarder" by his own people, and Xerxes gathered stores of wealth in addition. When Xerxes was on his way to invade Grecia, a Lydian named Pythius entertained the whole Persian army with feasts, and offered to aid in bearing the expense of the campaign. Xerxes asked who this man of such wealth was. He was answered: "This is the man, O king! who gave thy father Darius the golden plane tree, and likewise the golden vine; and he is still the wealthiest man we know of in all the world, excepting thee."—

HERODOTUS, book 7, par. 27.

"Richer than they all," Xerxes, "through his riches," was able, as the prophecy had foretold, to "stir up all against the realm of Grecia." Forty-nine nations marched under his banners to the attack. The Greek poet, Aeschylus, who himself fought against the Persians, wrote of Xerxes' mighty host,

"And myriad-peopled Asia's king, a battle-eager lord,
From utmost east to utmost west sped on his countless horde,
In unnumbered squadrons marching, in fleets of keels untold,
Knowing none dared disobey,
For stern overseers were they
Of the godlike king begotten of the ancient race of Gold."

—"Persae," Way's translation.

Xerxes boasted that he was leading "the whole race of mankind to the destruction of Greece." But his invasion ended in the total rout of his forces by land and by sea. It was an advertisement to the world that Persia's might was broken. The prophecy treats it so, and deals no further with Persian history.

W. A. SPICER, *Our Day in the Light of Prophecy,* pp. 323, 324.

Digitized by Google

62. Had Daniel prophesied 222 years before the event that Persia, led by Darius, would be conquered by Greece, led by Alexander the Great, at the battle of Arbela?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Dan. 8:3, 5-7, 20, 21—Then I lifted up mine eyes, and saw, and, behold, there stood before the river a ram which had two horns:.... And as I was considering, behold, an he goat came from the west on the face of the whole earth, and touched not the ground: and the goat had a notable horn between his eyes. And he came to the ram that had two horns, which I had seen standing before the river, and ran unto him in the fury of his power. And I saw him come close unto the ram, and he was moved with choler against him, and smote the ram, and brake his two horns: and there was no power in the ram to stand before him,.... and there was none that could deliver the ram out of his hand. The ram which thou sawest having two horns are the kings of Media and Persia. And the rough goat is the king of Grecia: and the great horn that is between his eyes is the first king.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Vision of the ram and the he-goat, chap. VIII.

These symbols are explained for us in the chapter itself. They relate to the second and third empires. The two-horned ram is Medo-Persia, vs. 20; the rough goat is Grecia, vs. 21; and the great horn between his eyes is the Macedonian conqueror, Alexander the Great. Most accurate and graphic is the description of the swift movements of the goat, and the "choler" with which he assaulted the ram. It is in exact accord with the historical facts in the case; for Persia had invaded Greece and aroused the national feeling of resentment in the highest degree; hence the "choler" with which the goat rushed upon the ram. In three battles Alexander made himself master of the world. At his death, his empire was parcelled out among his four generals, and so "four kingdoms stood up" in the room of the one founded by Alexander.

W. G. MOOREHEAD, D.D., *Outline Studies in the Books of the Old Testament*, pp. 286, 287.

The battle of Arbela (331 B.C.).—From Egypt Alexander retracted his steps to Syria and marched eastward. At Arbela, not far from the ancient Nineveh, his farther advance was disputed by Darius with an immense army, numbering, if we may rely upon our authorities, over a million men. The vast Persian host was overthrown with enormous slaughter. Darius fled from the field, as he had done at Issus, and later was treacherously killed by an attendant.

The battle of Arbela was one of the decisive combats of history. It marked the end of the long struggle between the East and the West, between Persia and Greece, and prepard the way for the spread of Hellenic civilization over all Western Asia.

Myers, *General History*, pp. 153, 154.

The famous battle of Arbela, between Alexander and Darius, saw Darius, the last of the Persian kings, defeated, and Grecia became

Digitized by Google

forthwith the world's ruler. When God said, "There shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee," who could hinder its coming to pass? This decisive event occurred in B. C. 331. Thus another stake is driven for skeptics to pull up, if they can. God's mill grinds slowly, but surely. The great wheels of time roll around, and the events come to pass, whether man is prepared or not. It is our privilege to be ready to meet them as they come. "A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself; but the simple pass on, and are punished." Prov. 22:3.

G. G. Rupert, *The Inspired History of Nations Past and Future*, p. 284.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

GREECE

63. Did Daniel by a leopard prophesy the Kingdom of Greece?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 7:6—After this I beheld, and lo another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The third kingdom, Grecia, is represented by this symbol. If wings upon the lion signified rapidity of conquest, they would signify the same here. The leopard itself is a swift-footed beast, but this was not sufficient to represent the career of the nation which it symbolized in this respect; it must have wings in addition. Two wings, the number the lion had, were not sufficient, it must have four; this would denote unparalleled celerity of movement, which we find to be historically true of the Grecian kingdom. The conquests of Grecia under Alexander have no parallel in historic annals for suddenness and rapidity.

Rollin, Ancient History, b. 15, sec. 2, gives the following brief synopsis of Alexander's marches:—

"From Macedonia to the Ganges, which river Alexander nearly approached, is computed at least eleven hundred leagues. Add to this the various turnings in Alexander's marches; first, from the extremity of Cilicia, where the battle of Issus was fought, to the temple of Jupiter Ammon in Libya; and his returning from thence to Tyre, a journey of three hundred leagues at least, and as much space at least for the windings of his route in different places; we shall find that Alexander, in less than eight years, marched his army upward of seventeen hundred leagues [or more than *fifty-one hundred miles*], without including his return to Babylon."

URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, pp. 128, 131.

64. Did Daniel prophesy that the kingdom of Alexander would be a great one?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Dan. 11:2, 3 (B. C. 534)—And now will I shew thee the truth. Behold, there shall stand up yet three kings in Persia; and the fourth shall be far richer than they all: and by his strength through his riches he shall stir up all against the realm of Grecia. And a mighty king shall stand up, that shall rule with great dominion, and do according to his will.

Digitized by Google

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

"Alexander deserves the glory which he has enjoyed for so many centuries and among all nations;...."—Napoleon.

Quoted in CREASY'S *The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World*, p. 57.

"Asia beheld with astonishment and awe the uninterrupted progress of a hero, the sweep of whose conquests was as wide and rapid as that of her own barbaric kings or the Scythian or Chaldaean hordes; but, far unlike the transient whirlwinds of Asiatic warfare, the advance of the Macedonian leader was no less deliberate than rapid; at every step the Greek power took root, and the language and the cilivilization of Greece were planted from the shores of the Aegean to the banks of the Indus, from the Caspian and the great Hyrcanian plain to the cataracts of the Nile; to exist actually for nearly a thousand years, and in their effects to endure forever."—Arnold.

Quoted in CREASY'S *The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World*, p. 57.

Alexander is intended in Dan. 2:39 and also Dan. 7:6; 8:5-7; 11:3, 4, the latter indicating the rapidity of his conquests and his power. He ruled with great dominion, and did according to his will, Dan. 11:3; "and there was none that could deliver.... out of his hand." Dan. 8:7.

WM. SMITH, LL.D., *Bible Dictionary—Teacher's Edition*, p. 29.

65. Did what "has been pronounced the greatest military achievement of Alexander" fulfill a prophecy made by Ezekiel 256 years before the event?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Ezekiel 26:4, 12, 14 (B. C. 590)—And they shall destroy the walls of Tyrus, and break down her towers: I will also scrape her dust from her, and make her like the top of a rock... and they shall break down thy walls, and destroy thy pleasant houses: and they shall lay thy stones and thy timber and thy dust in the midst of the water. And I will make thee like the top of a rock: thou shalt be a place to spread nets upon; thou shalt be built no more: for I the Lord have spoken it, saith the Lord God.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The ruins of the old city still remained. The prophecy had declared that the timbers and the stones and even the very dust should be cast into the sea, leaving a bare rock. These words were not fulfilled, and it seemed improbable that they ever would be; for if Nebuchadnezzar, in his anger, had taken a full vengeance, and had not thought of this, who was likely to care enough about the ruins of the city to wreak such a vengeance? It would be the very frenzy of madness. But meanwhile there the words stood in the Book of which Jesus said that not one word should be broken. Two and a half centuries passed away, and still the ruins stood, a challenge to the accuracy of prophecy. Then through the east the fame of Alexander the Great sent a thrill of terror. He marched to the attack of Tyre. Reaching the shore, he saw the city he had come to take, with half a mile of water

Digitized by Google

between them, built upon an island. Alexander's plan of attack was speedily formed and executed. He took the walls, towers, timbers, and ruined houses and palaces of the ancient city, and with them, built a solid causeway through the half mile of sea to the island city. Even her mounds of ruins were carried away; and so great was the demand for material, that the very dust was scraped from the site and laid in the sea. The city was to be built no more. This divine sentence of judgment has for centuries been a challenge to all time. It is unanswered still.

EARLE ALBERT ROWELL (A Converted Infidel), *The Bible in the Critics' Den*, p. 109.

The Siege of Tyre (332 B. C.).—Alexander now turned to the south, in order to effect the subjugation of Phoenicia. The island-city of Tyre, after a memorable siege, was taken by means of a mole built with incredible labor through the sea to the city. The causeway still remains, uniting the rock with the mainland. When at last the city was taken after a siege of seven months, eight thousand of the inhabitants were slain and thirty thousand sold into slavery. The reduction of Tyre has been pronounced the greatest military achievement of Alexander.

Myers, *General History*, p. 153.

66. Did the result of the battle of Ipsus (301 B. C.) fulfill a prophecy by Daniel that no descendant of Alexander the Great would ever sit on his throne, but that his kingdom would be divided between four?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 11:3, 4—And a mighty king shall stand up, that shall rule with great dominion, and do according to his will.

And when he shall stand up, his kingdom shall be broken, and shall be divided toward the four winds of heaven; and not to his posterity, nor according to his dominion which he ruled: for his kingdom shall be plucked up, even for others beside those.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

"The battle of Ipsus [301 B. C.] resulted in a permanent division of the vast empire founded by Alexander the Great, after twenty-two years of sanguinary wars among his generals, during which the whole of Alexander's family and all his relatives perished. The triumphant Seleucus and Lysimachus divided the dominion of Asia between them, Seleucus receiving the Euphrates Valley, northern Syria, Cappadocia, and part of Phrygia; while Lysimachus obtained the remainder of Asia Minor in addition to Thrace, which extended along the western shores of the Euxine as far north as the mouth of the Danube. Ptolemy was allowed to hold Egypt along with Palestine, Phoenicia, and Coele-Syria; while Cassander was allowed to reign in Macedonia and Greece until his death."[5]

These brief historical statements record the fulfilment of every specification given in Dan. 11:4. Within two hundred and thirty-five years after this prophecy was written, Persia had been overthrown by

[5] *"Library of Universal History,"* Vol. III, p. 779.

Digitized by Google

Grecia; Alexander, the "mighty king," had been broken by the hand of death, and his kingdom had been divided toward the four winds of heaven, "not to his posterity," but "for others."

ARTHUR G. DANIELLS, World Lecturer and Traveler, *The World War*, pp. 54-56.

67. Did Daniel prophecy, 369 years before the event, that Greece would be conquered by Rome?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Dan. 7:7 (B. C. 537)—After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The sovereignty of the world was held by Babylon from the time of this dream, B. C. 603, until B. C. 538, when it passed to the Medes and Persians. The victory of the Grecian forces at the battle of Arbela, in B. C. 331, marked the downfall of the Medo-Persian Empire, and the Greeks then became the undisputed rulers of the world. The battle of Pydna, in Macedonia, in B. C. 168, was the last organized effort to withstand a world-wide conquest by the Romans, and at that time therefore the sovereignty passed from the Greeks to the Romans, and the fourth kingdom was fully established.

Bible Readings for the Home Circle, p. 207. Copyrighted by the Review and Herald Publishing Association.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X.

ROME

68. Did Daniel through prophecy give a correct picture of the Roman Kingdom?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 2:40 (B. C. 603)—And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron:....

Daniel 7:7 (B. C.)—After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Inspiration finds no beast in nature which it can make even the basis of a symbol to represent the power here illustrated. No addition of hoofs, heads, horns, wings, scales, teeth, or nails to any beast found in nature, would answer. This power was diverse from all the others, and the symbol wholly nondescript..... How accurately Rome answered to the iron division of the image! How accurately it answers to the beast before us! In the dread and terror which it inspired, and in its exceeding strength, the world has never seen its equal. It devoured as with iron teeth, and brake in pieces; and it ground the nations into the very dust beneath its brazen feet.

URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, p. 132.

69. Did Daniel prophecy, 435 years before Rome was mistress of the world, her marvellous strength and power?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Dan. 2:40 (B. C. 603)—And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Three hundred times—such is assented to be the number—the Imperial City had witnessed the triumphal procession of her victorial generals, celebrating conquests in all quarters of the world.

Myers, *General History*, p. 308.

Describing the Roman conquests, Gibbon uses the very imagery employed in the vision of Daniel 2. He says: "The arms of the republic, sometimes vanquished in battle, always victorious in war, advanced

Digitized by Google

with rapid steps to the Euphrates, the Danube, the Rhine, and the ocean; and the images of *gold,* or *silver,* or *brass,* that might serve to represent the nations and their kings, were successively broken by the *iron* monarchy of Rome."—

"Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire," chap. 38, par. 1, under "General Observations," at the close of the chapter. Review and Herald Publishing Association, in *Bible Readings for the Home Circle,* p. 207.

70. Did Roman soldiers, led by Pompey, conquer Syria in the year 64 B. C. and Jerusalem in the year 63 B. C. in fulfillment of prophecies made by Daniel 470 and 471 years before those events?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Dan. 11:16 (B. C. 534)—But he that cometh against him shall do according to his own will, and none shall stand before him: and he shall stand in the glorious land, which by his hand shall be consumed.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Pompey now turned south and conquered Syria, Phoenicia, and Coele-Syria, which countries he erected into a Roman province under the name of Syria (64 B. C.). Still pushing southward, the conqueror entered Palestine, and after a short siege of Jerusalem, by taking advantage of the scruples of the Jews in regard to fighting on the Sabbath day, captured the city (63 B. C.).

Myers, *General History,* p. 262.

Pompey, however, acted very differently from Alexander. He entered the city by force after a siege of three months; the walls were demolished and the Jews put under tribute to the Roman government. Rome now stood "in the glorious land which by his hand shall be consumed." This was in B. C. 63.

S. N. HASKELL, *The Story of Daniel the Prophet,* p. 239.

71. Hundreds of years before the events, did Daniel prophesy that Julius Caesar and Cleopatra would become infatuated with each other, and that afterwards Cleopatra would turn against Rome?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Dan. 11:17 (B. C. 534)—He shall also set his face to enter with the strength of his whole kingdom, and upright ones with him; thus shall he do: and he shall give him the daughter of women, corrupting her: but she shall not stand on his side, neither be for him.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Caesar had his bitter personal enemies, who never ceased to plot his downfall..... It was reported that he proposed to rebuild the walls of Troy, the fabled cradle of the Roman race, and make that ancient capital the seat of the new Roman Empire. Others professed to believe that the arts and charms of the Egyptian Cleopatra, who had borne him a son at Rome, would entice him to make Alexandria the center of the proposed kingdom.

Myers, *General History,* p. 269.

Digitized by Google

"But," said the prophet, "she shall not stand on his side, neither be for him." Cleopatra afterward joined herself to Antony, the enemy of Augustus Caesar, and exerted her whole power against Rome.

URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, p. 264.

72. Did Daniel prophesy the death of Julius Caesar 490 years before the event?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 11:19 (B. C. 534)—Then he shall turn his face toward the fort of his own land: but he shall stumble and fall, and not be found.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

After this conquest, Caesar defeated the last remaining fragments of Pompey's party, Cato and Scipio in Africa, and Labienus and Varus in Spain. Returning to Rome, the "fort of his own land," he was made perpetual dictator;.... But the prophet had said that he should stumble and fall. The language implies that his overthrow would be sudden and unexpected, like a person accidentally stumbling in his walk. And so this man, who had fought and won five hundred battles, taken one thousand cities, and slain one million one hundred and ninety-two thousand men, fell, not in the din of battle and the hour of strife, but when he thought his pathway was smooth and strewn with flowers, and when danger was supposed to be far away; for, taking his seat in the senate chamber upon his throne of gold, to receive at the hands of that body the title of king, the dagger of treachery suddenly struck him to the heart. Cassius, Brutus, and other conspirators rushed upon him, and he fell, pierced with twenty-three wounds. Thus he suddenly stumbled and fell, and was not found, B. C. 44.

URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, pp. 264, 265.

73. About 425 years before the event, did Daniel foretell that Augustus Caesar would be a tax-raiser?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 11:20 (B. C. 534)—Then shall stand up in his estate a raiser of taxes in the glory of the kingdom:....

Luke 2:1—And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus that all the world should be taxed.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

He was emphatically a raiser of taxes. Luke, in speaking of the events that transpired at the time when Christ was born, says: "And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be enrolled [for taxation]." Luke 2:1. That taxing which embraced all the world was an event worthy of notice; and the person who enforced it has certainly a claim to the title of "a raiser of taxes" above every other competitor.

The St. Louis *Globe Democrat*, as quoted in *Current Literature* for July, 1895, says: "Augustus Caesar was not the public benefactor he is represented. He was the most exacting tax collector the Roman world had up to that time ever seen."

URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, pp. 265, 266.

Digitized by Google

74. About 900 or 1000 years before the event, did Daniel prophesy that the Roman kingdom would be divided into ten kingdoms?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 7:7 (B. C. 737)—After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast,.... and it had ten horns.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

With the Gothic invasion and the break-up of the western Roman Empire into ten kingdoms,....

H. GRATTAN GUINNESS, D.D., Fellow of the Royal Astronomical Society. *History Unveiling Prophecy*, p. 63.

The question therefore naturally arises, Do the ten toes of the image represent the ten final divisions of the Roman empire? To those who prefer what seems to be a natural and straightforward interpretation of the word of God, it is a matter of no little astonishment that any question should here be raised. To take the ten toes to represent the ten kingdoms into which Rome was divided seems like such an easy, consistent, and matter-of-course procedure, that it requires a labored effort to interpret it otherwise.....

This division was accomplished between the years A. D. 351 and A. D. 476.... No historians of whom we are aware, place the beginning of this work of the dismemberment of the Roman empire earlier than A. D. 351, and there is general agreement in assigning its close in A. D. 476.... But all historians agree in this, that out of the territory of Western Rome, ten separate kingdoms were ultimately established, and we may safely assign them to the time between the dates above named; namely, A. D. 351 and 476.

The ten nations which were most instrumental in breaking up the Roman empire, and which at some time in their history held respectively portions of Roman territory as separate and independent kingdoms, may be enumerated (without respect to the time of their establishment) as follows: The Huns, Ostrogoths, Visigoths, Franks, Vandals, Suevi, Burgundians, Heruli, Anglo-Saxons, and Lombards. The connection between these and some of the modern nations of Europe, is still traceable in the names, as England, Burgundy, Lombardy, France, etc. Such authorities as Calmet, Faber, Lloyd, Hales, Scott, Barnes, etc., concur in the foregoing enumeration. (See Barnes's concluding notes on Daniel 7.) ....

THE TEN DIVISIONS OF ROME.

* * *

Machiavelli, the historian of Florence, writing simply as a historian, names the Huns as one of the nations principally concerned in the breaking up of the Roman empire. Among those who have written on this point with reference to the prophecy, may be mentioned, Berengaud, in the ninth century; Mede, 1586-1638; Bossuet, 1627-1704; Lloyd, 1627-1717; Sir Isaac Newton, 1642-1727; Bishop Newton, 1704-1782; Hales, —1821; Faber, 1773-1854.

Of these nine authorities, eight take the position that the Huns were one of the ten kingdoms; of these eight, two, Bossuet and Bishop

Digitized by Google

Newton, followed by Dr. Clarke, have both the Huns and the Alemanni; only one, Mede, omits the Huns and takes the Alemanni. Thus eight favor the view that the Huns were represented by one of the horns; two, while not rejecting the Huns, consider the Alemanni one of the horns; one rejects the Huns and takes the Alemanni. Scott and Barnes, in their commentaries, and Oswald, in his Kingdom That Shall Not Be Moved, name the Huns.

URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, pp. 62, 67, 68; Appendix, p. 785.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI.

JESUS THE CHRIST IN PROPHECY

75. Did Isaiah prophesy, 712 years before Christ that John the Baptist would be his forerunner?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 40:3 (B. C. 712)—The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.

Matthew 3:1-3—In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea, And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

John the Baptist,.... It was John's special mission to prepare the way for the ministry of the Messiah, and in the year 26 A. D. he was in the wilderness of Judea, clad in a garment of camel's hair, calling upon the people to repent. He baptized Christ in the River Jordan and continued to preach until imprisoned by Herod Antipas. This official caused him to be beheaded, to gratify the malice of his wife, Herodias.

Home and School Reference Work. Vol. III, p. 1511. Editor-In-Chief William F. Rocheleau, Director of Training School, Southern Illinois State Normal University, etc.; Associate Editor, Loran D. Osborn Ph.D., Director of University Extension Division and Professor of Sociology, University of Colorado; Literary Editor, Bertha M. White, A.B., Northwestern University, 1913.

The recovery of several anciet sites; the careful verification of Machaerus, the scene of John the Baptist's imprisonment and martyrdom; the very interesting discovery of Zoar, with the valuable illustration it affords of the careful accuracy of the Scriptural narrative in the minutest details;....—these certainly were enough to reward the most sanguine explorer.

H. B. TRISTRAM, M.A.,LLD.,F.R.S., Canon of Durham; Preface. *The Land of Moab.*

76. Did Jesus fulfill a prophecy in the Pentateuch that a Star would come out of Jacob?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Numbers 24:17—I shall see him, but not now: I shall behold him, but not nigh: there shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre shall rise out of Israel,....

Digitized by Google

Matthew 2:1, 2—Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Wise men in the eastern limits of the vast empire of Augustus, having read the prophecies, were watching for His star, and they, too, beheld a shining company of angels, and knew that God dwelt with men.

S. N. HASKELL, *The Story of Daniel the Prophet*, p. 243.

One of the most vividly beautiful recitals of the "old, old Story," is that by Dr. J. G. Holland: "There's a song in the air, there's a star in the sky, there's a mother's deep prayer and a baby's low cry; and the star rains its fire while the beautiful sing, for the manger of Bethlehem cradles a King. There's a tumult of joy o'er the wonderful birth, for the virgin's sweet boy is the Lord of the earth; ay, the star rains its fire and the beautiful sing, for the manger of Bethlehem cradles a King! In the light of that star lie the ages impearled, and that song from afar has swept over the world. Every hearth is aflame, and the beautiful sing in the homes of the nations that Jesus is King. We rejoice in the light, and we echo the song that comes down through the night from the heavenly throng. Ay! we shout to the lovely evangel they bring, and we greet in his cradle our Savior and King."

FRANKLIN EDSON BELDEN, *The Crown Jewels of Art*, p. 316.

77. Was Christ a descendant of David in fulfillment of prophecies made many hundred years before His birth by Moses, Isaiah and Jeremiah?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Genesis 49:10—The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be.

Isaiah 11:10—And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious.

Jeremiah 23:5 (B. C. 599)—Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth.

Revelation 22:16—I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

In a measure the Jews fulfilled their mission. For nearly two thousand years they were kept a separate people, but not wholly in harmony with God's intention. As a separate people, from a genealogical standpoint, their records were perfectly accurate; for whenever a child was born his name, his family, was immediately recorded with his tribal ancestry. In order to lay claim to any inheritance, his genealogy must be proved beyond any shadow of doubt.

Digitized by Google

APPARITION OF SHEPHERDS

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

For this reason when Jesus was born, the people at the time never questioned His lineage; they all knew He belonged to the family of David, of the tribe of Judah. About twenty times in the New Testament it is recorded that He was the Son of David.

F. C. GILBERT, A Hebrew Christian—*Practical Lessons from the Experience of Israel for the Church of To-day*, pp. 20, 21.

78. Did Micah, 710 years before He was born, prophesy the birthplace of Jesus?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Micah 5:2 (B. C. 710)—But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from old, from everlasting.

Matthew 2:1—Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king,.....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

O little town of Bethlehem!
How still we see thee lie;
Above thy deep and dreamless sleep,
The silent stars go by.
Yet, in thy dark street shineth
The everlasting Light;
The hopes and fears of all the years,
Are met in thee, to-night.

PHILLIPS BROOKS, *O Little Town of Bethlehem*, in *Holy-Days and Holidays*. Compiled by Edward M. Deems, A.M.,Ph.D., p. 434.

The Lord set the whole Roman world in commotion to bring a young woman to the little town where she was born. To the Roman government taxes were the chief thing; to heaven Mary's coming to Bethlehem was the object. And Caesar decreed, and the clerks wrote, and wheels turned, and armies marched, and Mary was brought where God wanted her.

REV. GUSTAV F. JOHNSON, Pastor, Swedish Tabernacle, Minneapolis, Minn.

O little town, O little town,
Upon the hills afar,
You call to us, a thing sublime,
Across the great gray wastes of time,
For men go up and men go down,
But follow still the star!

CLINTON SCOLLARD, "The Little Town," in *Christ in the Poetry of Today*. An Anthology from American Poets, Compiled by Martha Foote Crowe, p. 4.

Every day should be the birthday of the Saviour to a renewed soul. Amid all that is humiliating there is much that is honorable in the circumstances of the birth of our Immanuel. Whose birth was ever ushered in by a long train of prophecy, or longed for by such a multitude of hearts? Who but He can boast of a forerunner who marked Him as the coming Man? When did angels indulge in midnight songs, or did God ever hang a new star in the sky before? To whose cradle

Digitized by Google

did rich and poor make so willing a pilgrimage, and offer such hearty and unsought oblations?.... O Bethlehem, house of bread, we see in thee our hopes forever gratified! " 'Tis He, the Saviour, long foretold, to usher in the age of gold." Let gladness rule the hour; let holy song and sweet heart-music accompany our soul in its rapture of delight.

SPURGEON, in *One Thousand and One Thoughts from My Library*, by D. L. Moody, pp. 196, 197.

"As in old time Cyrus was called to the throne of the world's empire that he might set free the captives of the Lord, so Caesar Augustus is made the agent for the fulfillment of God's purpose in bringing the mother of Jesus to Bethlehem. She is of the lineage of David, and the Son of David must be born in David's city."

Quoted by S. N. HASKELL, in *The Story of Daniel the Prophet*, p. 245.

Again I walk in Bethlehem-town
And think on Him that wears the crown.
I may not kiss His feet again,
Nor worship Him as did I then;
My King hath died upon the tree,
And hath outpoured on Calvary
What blood redeemeth you and me!

EUGENE FIELD, "Bethlehem-Town," *Poems of Eugene Field*, Complete Edition.

A labouring man had come up from the country for a holiday in London. He seemed strong and active, though his hair was grey; and standing in the Roman Gallery, he looked wonderingly at the long line of statues and busts of the Roman Emperors. As I pointed out one and another to a friend with me, he stepped forward and said, "Have they got Julius Caesar here?" I at once told him that the bust stood at the end of the gallery...., and he walked towards it, but soon came back again, evidently not quite satisfied. I asked him if he had found it.

"No," he said, "I couldn't see him." So I took the old man back to where it stood, and pointed it out. "Is he the one that took Jerusalem?" he asked. "Oh no," I replied, "that was Titus; his statue is up on the wall."

He at once placed himself in front of the bracket on which it stood, and gazed up for some minutes, then went to one side, then to the other, and examined the face well..... "You are interested in these things?" I inquired. "Yes," he replied, "and now I can tell folks when I go home that I've seen him. Which is the one that was alive when Jesus Christ was crucified?" I soon showed him Tiberius Caesar, and then Augustus, telling him how God had through his means set the whole Roman world in motion, in order that according to prophecy Christ might be born in Bethlehem. And then I asked him if he knew the Lord Jesus Christ. With a bright satisfied look lighting up his fine old face, he said, "Ah, yes! one gets to know summat of Him in a lifetime."

Digitized by Google

There were many things to be seen in London, but evidently the British Museum stood first and foremost in his estimation, because he could there see portraits of those about whom he read in the Bible.

ADA R. HABERSHON, Introduction. *The Bible and the British Museum*, pp. 5, 6.

But after all, the golden sun
Poured out its floods on them
That watched and waited fer the One
Then borned in Bethlyham.

* * *

The sages then in wurship bowed,
From ev'ry clime so fare;
O, sinner, think of that glad crowd
That congergated thare!

They was content to fall in ranks
With One that knowed the way
From good old Jurden's stormy banks
Clean up to Jedgmunt Day.

JAMES WHITCOMB RILEY, "A Hymb of Faith." *The Complete Works of James Whitcomb Riley*. Vol. 2, p. 425.

Micah was the prophet of the common people..... The Messiah was to be of rustic and popular origin. This truth is so familiar to us that we have ceased to wonder, but it would impress us more if we remembered that the most definite prediction of this lowly origin came through the prophet of the common people. The wise men whom Herod consulted about the birth-place of the Christ quoted from memory Micah V. 2. The other side of the truth,—that the King was to be the Wonderful Counsellor, the Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace,—might well come through Isaiah, the noble son of Jerusalem; but when the Spirit wished to point men's eyes towards Bethlehem, He spoke through Micah. The prophet who hailed from a village somewhat like Bethlehem, assured his weary fellow toilers that the coming Messiah, even in His birth, would be one of themselves. The social prophet of to-day finds in this same truth his surest comfort for the woes of the oppressed. "The poor have the Gospel preached to them."

ANDREW W. BLACKWOOD, *The Prophets—Elijah to Christ*, p. 133, 141, 142.

79. Did Isaiah prophesy correctly that Jesus would be a light to the world? BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 9:2 (B. C. 740)—The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light:....

John 1:1, 4—In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God . In him was life; and the life was the light of men. SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The words of Jesus were a gleam in thick night; it has taken eighteen hundred years for the eyes of humanity (what do I say! of an infinitely small portion of humanity) to learn to abide it.

ERNEST RENAN, quoted by Rev. Frank Gunsaulus, D.D., President, Armour Institute. *The Man of Galilee*, p. 173.

Digitized by Google

Have you ever seen the light break over the cliff-tops of some high mountain peak? Have you ever watched the sun kiss a landscape into beauty?..... Oh, it's a great sight; but there's no sight like seeing the light from Calvary kiss a human face as it fills the heart with the assurance of Divine forgiveness.

GYPSY SMITH, *Your Boys*, p. 38.

"Let intellectual and spiritual culture progress, and the human mind expand as much as it will; beyond the grandeur and the moral elevation of Christianity, as it sparkles and shines in the Gospels, the human mind will not advance."—Goethe.

Quoted in *The Bible in the Critics' Den*, by Earle Albert Rowell, p. 97.

80. Was Jesus Christ a corner stone in fulfillment of a prophecy in Isaiah?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 28:16 (B. C. 712)—Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation:....

Ephesians 2:19, 20—Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, and fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

All history is incomprehensible without Him. He created the object and fixed the starting point of the future faith of humanity..... The highest consciousness of God which ever existed in the breast of humanity was that of Jesus. Repose now in Thy glory, noble founder! .... Thou shalt become the corner-stone of humanity so entirely that to tear Thy name from this world would rend it to its foundations..... Whatever may be the surprises of the future, Jesus will never be surpassed.

ERNEST RENAN, quoted in *The Fundamentals*, Vol. III, pp. 367, 368.

81. Is Jesus Christ the World's Masterpiece?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

John 14:6—Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life:....

John 7:41, 45, 46—Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee? Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him? The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

I know men, and I tell you Jesus Christ was not a man. Superficial minds see a resemblance between Christ and the founders of empires and the gods of other religions. That resemblance does not exist. There is between Christianity and other religions the distance of in-

Digitized by Google

finity. Alexander, Caesar, Charlemagne and myself founded empires. But on what did we rest the creations of our genius? Upon sheer force. Jesus Christ alone founded His empire upon love; and at this hour millions of men will die for Him. In every other existence but that of Christ how many imperfections! From the first day to the last He is the same; majestic and simple; infinitely firm and infinitely gentle. He proposes to our faith a series of mysteries and commands with authority that we should believe them, giving no other reason than those tremendous words, 'I am God.'

The Bible contains a complete series of acts and of historical men to explain time and eternity, such as no other religion has to offer. If it is not the true religion, one is very excusable in being deceived; for everything in it is grand and worthy of God. The more I consider the Gospel, the more I am assured that there is nothing there which is not beyond the march of events and above the human mind. Even the impious themselves have never dared to deny the sublimity of the Gospel, which inspires them with a sort of compulsory veneration. What happiness that Book procures for those who believe it!

NAPOLEON BONAPARTE. Quoted in *The Fundamentals*, Vol. III, p. 364.

So, then, through the fair gloss of His manhood, we perceive the rich bloom of His divinity; and from the author we accept his own moving precept: "Cling to Christ, cling ever closer unto Christ." And surely this we may say: if He is not now without an assailant, at least He is without a rival. If He be not the Sun of righteousness, the Physician of souls, the Friend that gives His life for His friends, and that sticketh closer than a brother, the unfailing Consoler, the constant Guide, the everlasting Priest and King, at least, as all must confess, ther is no other come into His room.

GLADSTONE, *"Ecco Homo,"* pp. 124, 125.

It was the distinguishing mark of the Jewish people that their golden age was not in the past, but in the future; that their greatest Hero (as they deemed him to be) was not their founder, but their founder's latest descendant. Their traditions, their fancies, their glories gathered round the head, not of a chief, or warrior, or sage that had been, but of a King, a Deliverer, a Prophet who was to come. Of this singular expectation the Prophets were, if not the chief authors, at least the chief exponents..... He is to be a King, a Conqueror, yet not by the common weapons of earthly warfare, but by those only weapons which the Prophetic order recognized—by justice, mercy, truth, and goodness,—by suffering, by endurance, by identification of Himself with the joys, the sufferings of His nation, by opening a wider sympathy to the whole human race than had ever been opened before. .... Was this unparalleled expectation realised? And here again I speak only of facts which are acknowledged by Germans and Frenchmen, no less than by Englishmen, by critics and by sceptics even more fully than by theologians and ecclesiastics. There did arise out of this nation a Character by universal consent as unparalleled as the expectation which had preceded Him. Jesus of Nazareth was, on the most superficial no less than on the deepest view we take of His com-

Digitized by Google

ing, the greatest name, the most extraordinary power, that has ever crossed the stage of History. And this greatness consisted, not in outward power, but precisely in those qualities on which from first to last the Prophetic order had laid the utmost stress—justice and love, goodness and truth. I push this argument no further. Its force is weakened the moment we introduce into it any controverted detail..... It is a proof that the noblest hopes and aspirations that were ever breathed, were not disappointed; and that when 'God spake by the Prophets' of the coming Christ, He spake of that which in His own good time He was certain to bring to pass.

DEAN STANLEY, *History of the Jewish Church,* Vol. I, pp. 406, 407.

At once the greatest difficulty in the Bible and the weightiest proof of its divinity is Jesus Christ. He stands out commandingly among all the sons of men, unapproached and unapproachable. He walks down the ages with the tread of a conqueror, while around him shines a lonely moral splendor that has compelled even skepticism to bow the head in hushed reverence. Yes, even the vitriolic pen of Tom Paine paused to praise Him. Upon the impregnable Rock of Ages, all criticisms are baffled, broken, and shivered. Christ is the great spiritual magnet drawing all men to himself.

From heaven, with the accumulated love of eternity in His heart, came this Kings of kings, to be one with humanity, to suffer the vilest mockery, endure the strongest temptations, and experience the lowest of deaths, that you and I might know what love is, that we might be reconciled to God, be restored to Edenic innocence and happiness. Around Him, all truth clusters and revolves, as do the planets about the sun. Roman greed and Jewish hate and Greek subtlety united to stamp out the truths given by Him. Such a powerful combination has no parallel in history. But the banner of the cross has been furled in far-off regions where even "the wings of the Roman eagle" never flew; and where the fame of the sons of fortune never sounded. Babylonia, Persia, Greece, and Rome, those mighty empires which bore such arrogant sway upon the earth—where are they? Their glory is dimmed and their power departed forever. The dust of centuries, the blood of millions, lie upon their well-nigh forgotten ruins. But the glory and power of the lowly Galilean, who spoke as never man spoke, is gathering beauty and momentum with every attack, with every age. And His word, as He foretold, is going rapidly to every nation, tongue, and people; and wherever the Bible goes, civilization, morals, and light arise.

EARLE ALBERT ROWELL (A Converted Infidel), *The Bible in the Critics' Den,* pp. 104, 105.

Young man, my advice to you is that you cultivate an acquaintance with and firm belief in the Holy Scriptures, for this is your certain interest. I think Christ's system of morals and religion, as He left them with us, the best the world ever saw or is likely to see.

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN, quoted in *The Fundamentals,* Vol. III, p. 363.

The late Yuan Shi Kai probably was the ablest pagan ruler of this century. He attributed the Chinese revolution to Christian missions,

Digitized by Google

saying that the Christian teaching of the fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of men would undermine every despotism on earth. He added: "I am not a Christian; I am a Confucianist. But Confucianism is not strong enough for the crisis which is upon us. Only Christ can save China."

J. W. Bashford, (Methodist Bishop) *The Centenary and the New Day,* in "Why a World Program in War Time," p. 28.

The face of Jesus must ever be re-painted by the human soul, as it proceeds towards its destiny under His leadership. No single age could have painted Him for any other time, least of all for all time. It will exhaust genius of every kind, yet the portrait will always be sublime. Not only faith, but doubt must essay the task. Like Leonardo's study, it will never be finished. An artist having the opinions of John Stuart Mill will make his sketch very human indeed, and yet every line of it will seem to be repeating the words of that English philosopher—"About the life and saying of Jesus there is a stamp of personal originality combined with profundity of insight which.... must place the Prophet of Nazareth, even in the estimation of those who have no belief in His inspiration, in the very first rank of the men of sublime genius of whom our species can boast. When this preeminent genius is combined with the qualities of probably the greatest moral reformer and martyr to that mission who ever existed upon earth, religion cannot be said to have made a bad choice in pitching on this man as the ideal representative and guide to humanity."

Rev. Frank W. Gunsaulus, D.D., *The Man of Galilee,* pp. 172, 173.

Can it be possible that the sacred personage whose history the Scriptures contain should be a mere man? Where is the man, where the philosopher, who could so live and so die without weakness and without ostentation? When Plato describes his imaginary righteous man, loaded with all the punishments of guilt, yet meriting the highest rewards of virtue, he exactly describes the character of Jesus Christ. What an infinite disproportion between the son of Sophroniscus and the Son of Mary. Socrates dies with honor, surrounded by his disciples listening to the most tender words—the easiest death that one could wish to die. Jesus dies in pain, dishonor, mockery, the object of universal cursing—the most horrible death that one could fear. At the receipt of the cup of poison, Socrates blesses him who could not give it to him without tears; Jesus, while suffering the sharpest pains, prays for His most bitter enemies. If Socrates lived and died like a philosopher, Jesus lived and died like a god.

Peruse the books of philosophers with all their pomp of diction. How meager, how contemptible are they when compared with the Scriptures! The majesty of the Scriptures strikes me with admiration.

Rousseau, quoted in *The Fundamentals,* Vol. III, pp. 366, 367.

Yes, Mr. Grady not only demonstrated that an editor may be a Christian, but that a very great intellect may be gospelized. His mental capacity was so wonderful it was almost startling. I have been with him in active conversation while at the same time he was dictat-

Digitized by Google

ing to a stenographer editorials for the Atlanta *Constitution*. But that intellect was not ashamed to bow to Christ. Among his last dying utterances was a request for the prayers of the churches in his behalf.

DR. T. DEWITT TALMAGE, in *Life of Henry W. Grady,** compiled by Mr. Henry W. Grady's Co-Workers on "The Constitution" and edited by Joel Chandler Harris, p. 432.

Rev. L. C. Smith, of Nellore, South India, writes: "Last night one of the brightest Brahmin students of the graduating class sat with me until a late hour. He began by saying, 'Tell me more about Jesus!' I did my best. With tears in his eyes and a heavy heart he told me how he had waded through Hinduism seeking satisfaction for his yearning soul with-out finding it. He lamented the sad condition of his country and freely stated that the light now breaking upon India has its source in Christ and not in Hinduism.

The Christian Workers Magazine, of The Moody Bible Institute, September, 1916.

Socrates is noble in his frank uncertainty about his life. "Whether I tried in the right way and with what success I shall know certainly when I arrive there, if it please God." Jesus is divine in His certainty. "O righteous Father, the world hath not known Thee, but I have known Thee."

"I have finished the work which Thou gavest Me to do."...

....The sage consoles his disciples by sending them out to find other teachers. "Greece is a wide place, Cebes, and there are in it many good men.... The Savior declares simply, "I will not leave you comfortless. I will come unto you." Socrates says, when they ask him for his last legacy, "If you take good care of yourselves, you will always gratify me and mine most." Jesus says, "This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you." And, if we let our eye run out beyond the times when both the tragedies—the tragedy of Athens and the tragedy of Jerusalem—were finished, and see what thoughts of the two sufferers were left behind them, we hear Phaedo closing his long story with these words: "This was the end, Echecrates, of our friend: of all the men whom we have known, the best, the wisest, and the most just." Nay; before the poison was given by the jailer's hand we hear him say to his great prisoner, "I have found you the most generous and gentle and best of all who ever came here." And then our thoughts run to Jerusalem, and hear the centurion who commanded the soldiers who crucified Jesus say, as he sees the Crucified give up the ghost, "Truly this was the Son of God."

I know not what to say to any man who does not feel the difference. I can almost dream what Socrates would say to any man who said there was no difference between Jesus and him. But how shall we state the difference? One is divine and human; the other is human only. One is Redeemer; the other is philosopher. One is inspired, and the other questions. One reveals, and the other argues. These statements,

*Henry W. Grady, soon after his death, was pronounced by Dr. T. DeWitt Talmage "the most promising of Americans."

Digitized by Google

doubtless, are all true. And in them all there is wrapepd up this, which is the truth of all the influence of Jesus over men's minds, that where Socrates brings an argument to meet an objection, Jesus always brings a nature to meet a nature,—a whole being which the truth has filled with strength, to meet another whole being which error has filled with feebleness.

REV. PHILLIPS BROOKS, Rector of Trinity Church, Boston, *The Influence of Jesus*, pp. 243-245.

One of the things said about our Lord was that he taught as one having authority.... He had the Scriptures at his tongue's end, and could also tell you what the great teachers of his own and other days said about them. Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms were as familiar to him as his own thoughts, and he could quote what had been "said of old time" as well as any scribe....

Judged by results, it is not too much to say that Jesus turned out of his school the greatest generation of teachers the world ever has known. Socrates, Plato and Aristotle, the great teachers of the most intellectual race yet produced, never had the hearing the apostles gained, or influence so varied a circle of human life. They were not what would be called good material when they began, but they had good training.

JOHN A. MARQUIS, D.D.,LL.D., General Secretary of the Board of Home Missions of the Presbyterian Church in the United States of America, *Learning to Teach from the Master Teacher*.—1913.

I have compassion on the multitude; this is the key that Christ has set for each one's Psalm of Life, and deeds are the only voices sweet enough to sing it in....

Christ is the magnet of humanity, and she has found the best vocation and the highest who brings most souls diseased within the healing power of His immortal gospel.

FRANCES E. WILLARD, *What Frances E. Willard Said*, pp. 81, 109.

More than sixty thousand volumes have been written, descriptive of Jesus.....

But Jesus is not studied out, any more than the sun is parceled out. He is the most thrilling note in all music, the most graceful line in all sculpture, "the most exquisite mingling of lights and shades in all paintings," the dome of all cathedraled splendor, the Man who has globed in Himself all the masterful qualities of all mankind.

To strike another chord, to add another line, to create additional admiration for the unapproachable, universal Character, the writer has penned a series of "briefs," that many might see in Him "the chiefest among ten thousand" and the "altogether lovely" One.

"Jesus, the very thought of Thee
With sweetness fills my breast;
But sweeter far Thy face to see,
And in Thy presence rest."

Lady Hope, a cultured and consecrated English lady, once told at Northfield Assembly how she was invited to visit the well-known evolutionist, Charles Darwin, during his last illness.....

Digitized by Google

"What are you reading?" asked Lady Hope, as she seated herself by his bedside. "Hebrews," he answered—"'the royal book' I call it. Isn't it grand?"

Lady Hope made some allusion to the strong opinions expressed by many persons on the history of the creation, its grandeur, and their treatment of the earlier chapters of the book of Genesis.

Professor Darwin appeared distressed, and a look of agony came over his face as he said: "I was a young man with unformed ideas. I threw out queries, suggestions, wondering all the time over everything; and to my astonishment, the ideas took like wildfire. People made a religion of them."

Then he paused, and after a few more sentences on "the holiness of God" and "the grandeur of this Book," he suddenly said: "I have a summerhouse in the garden, which holds about thirty people.... I know you read the Bible in the villages. To-morrow afternoon I should like the servants on the place, some of the tenants, and a few neighbors to gather in that house. Will you speak to them?" "What shall I speak about?" asked Lady Hope. "Christ Jesus!" he replied in a clear, emphatic voice, adding in a lower tone, "and His salvation."

Christ Jesus! Loftiest name for man's mind to comtemplate! Greatest name ever lisped! For a quarter of a century, I have continuously spoken of Him. Now I would write what I have thought, and comprehended, and apprehended.

"Sweetest name on mortal tongue,
Sweetest carol ever sung,
Jesus, blessed Jesus."

"Jesus the Christ," in *Signs of the Times,* April 8, 1919. WILLIAM P. PEARCE, author of "The Lover's Love," "In Touch With God," "Pen Pictures of the Face of Jesus," and "The Master's Greatest Monosyllables."

The highest that mortals have attained has consisted, like Thomas à Kempis, in imitating Christ.

COUNT SHIGENOBU OKUMA, Late Prime Minister and Minister for Foreign Affairs. *Fifty Years of New Japan,* Vol. II, p. 463. 1910.

James Russell Lowell says, "Christ was the first true democrat that ever breathed, as he was also the first true gentleman." Lowell also affirmed that the Church was "the first organized democracy." There are two remedies for the perils of democracy at home and abroad, and only two. The first is the painstaking, persistent inculcation of the principles of human worth, of human brotherhood, of justice and good will, which were proclaimed and exemplified by Christ nineteen hundred years ago. The other is the acceptance of the leadership of Christ in human affairs.... Jesus Christ is the solution of the world's political problem. He is the one preeminent figure in history which rises above all injustice, all unsoundness, all prejudice of nationality or race—the hope of the world. There is none other name under heaven given among men whereby society must be saved. What Plato in his Republic, Augustine in his City of God, More in his Utopia, and our modern political economists have been reaching after

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

JESUS THE CONSOLER

Digitized by Google

is a society built upon the plan of the Kingdom of Heaven. Back of our philosophies, our experiments, our gropings, lies the great solution, "One is your Master, even Christ, and all ye are brethren."

CORNELIUS H. PATTON, D.D., *World Facts and America's Responsibility*, pp. 177, 178.

Without Jesus risen from the dead and stainless in His perfection, some would hardly care to live, and for Jesus,.... more men and women would die than for any other cause on earth, and they would be the best blood of the race.... Three years or less was the measure of Jesus' public career, from the day the Baptist declared Him the Lamb of God spoken of by ancient prophecy, to the day when He was offered on the cross as the Passover Lamb according to the prophets.....

Once this Man had established Himself in history He became a permanent factor, a disturbing force never to be evaded, ever to be reckoned with. As a rock standing out from the midst of a stream, upon Jesus has the current of human life and thought beat and been broken from the first centuries to the nineteenth.

* * *

Never were there so many lives of Jesus written; never so much attention given to His actual words; never such anxiety to send forth His Gospel. Were a parchment discovered in an Egyptian mound, six inches square, containing fifty words which were certainly spoken by Jesus, this utterance would count more than all the books which have been published since the first century. If a veritable picture of the Lord could be unearthed from a catacomb, and the world could see with its own eyes what like He was, it would not matter that its colours were faded, and that it was roughly drawn, that picture would have at once a solitary place amid the treasures of art.

* * *

If one desired to realise how this Jew—His words, His life, His spirit,—has been woven into the warp and woof of life, let him imagine the effect of Jesus' influence removed as by a stroke and the pattern which remains. One would then see a city dotted with empty places, which are covered neither by grass nor flowers, where once had stood churches, orphanages, asylums, and hospitals. The whole machinery of charity and philanthropy would have disappeared, together with every monument to pity. Libraries would remain, but they would be robbed of those noble classics of many tongues which owe their genius and charm to the Master. There might still be galleries, but without Raphael, Michelangelo, Fra Angelico, Da Vinci, from whom their subjects and their inspiration had been taken. Music, in her most searching and solemn notes, would be no longer heard in that place; and if law be administered, it would be stripped of its majesty and life.

* * *

Jesus flung a wide net when He addressed the weary; He held out a strong allurement when He offered rest. Rest is one of the dozen comforting and fascinating words of human speech; it is undoctrinal,

Digitized by Google

practical, comprehensive, satisfying; it falls on the ear like the sound of a ballad floating out from some lighted home as the homeless vagrant goes down the street.

JOHN WATSON, D.D., Author of "The Bonnie Brier Bush," "The Doctrines of Grace," etc., etc. *The Life of the Master*, pp. 3, 6-8, 151.

82. Was Jesus a Great Physician in fulfillment of Bible prophecy?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 53:4 (B. C. 712)—Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.

Mathew 4:23—And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Not in robes of purple splendor, not in silken softness shod,
But in raiment worn with travel came their God,
And the people knew His presence by the heart that
ceased to sigh
When the glory of the Lord was passing by.

For He healed their sick at even, and He cured the leper's sore,
And sinful men and women sinned no more,
And the world grew mirthful hearted, and forgot its misery
When the glory of the Lord was passing by.*

W. J. DAWSON, *How He Came.*

We are located in a territory fifty by one hundred and fifty miles where there are no other foreign hospitals and our work has grown from the first day..... This has been our banner year so far, for our books show that for the past seven months we have had six thousand one hundred and eighty patients. We are so thankful for the complete and perfect Gospel of Jesus, for it not only brings peace and happiness to the mind but relief from suffering as well, and the individual steeped in the deepest heathen darkness can understand a message that relieves his pain. No wonder that the Great Physician who is an example to us at all times spent more time in healing than he did in preaching, and that twenty six of his miracles were miracles of healing and three more were to relieve the woes of mankind, and the command to all christendom is to go and do likewise.

I made three trips to see a typhoid patient fifty English miles away. He recovered and has been attending church ever since, but before this he never was interested in religion.

* * *

A young man with tuberculosis.... on being told that he could not live was much affected but we told him of the New Earth, Rev. 21, where pain would have no place—had a season of prayer and he was converted, and before he died he asked his mother to sell one of his rice paddys and give it to the cause of missions....

* Courtesy of Revell Publishing Company.

Digitized by Google

CHRIST HEALING THE SICK

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

I have a little Indian motorcycle.... and I save days of time—can make a trip now in a few hours that in the past would have taken two days but I need a heavier one with side car so that I can bring in patients. There is an agent here now that I can trade with and we have money to build a small addition to our dispensary, so that we will not have to do all of our work on the floor; for all of our rooms are Korean style and after we have sat on the floor for an hour treating a serious case one's back just about brakes.

Due to a private letter from Dr. and Mrs. Riley Russell, Missionaries, Soonan, Chosen or Korea, July 31, 1918.

83. Did the Psalms prophesy the sufferings of Christ on the cross?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Psalm 22:16, 17—For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have inclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet. I may tell all my bones: they look and stare upon me.

Psalm 69:20, 21—Reproach hath broken my heart; and I am full of heaviness: and I looked for some to take pity, but there was none; and for comforters, but I found none. They gave me also gall for my meat; and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink.

Matthew 27:27, 34, 35—Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of soldiers. They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink. And they crucified him,....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

John Bright has told me that he would be content to stake upon the Book of Psalms, as it stands, the great question whether there is or is not a Divine Revelation. It was not to him conceivable how a work so widely severed from all the known productions of antiquity, and standing upon a level so much higher, could be accounted for except by a special and extraordinary aid calculated to produce special and extraordinary results; for it is reasonable, nay needful, to presume a due correspondence between the cause and the effect. Nor does this opinion appear to be unreasonable.

GLADSTONE. *The Impregnable Rock of Holy Scripture*, p. 148.—1891. Revised and Enlarged Edition, From *The Sunday School Times*.

He was laid down at full length upon the implement of torture. His arms were stretched along the cross-beams; and at the very centre of the open palms,.... the point of a huge iron nail was placed, which, by the blow of a mallet, was driven home into the wood, crushing, with excruciating pain, all the fine nerves and muscles of the hands through which they were driven. Then the legs were drawn down at full length; and through either foot separately, or possibly through both together as they were placed one over the other, another huge nail tore its way through the quivering and bleeding flesh.

Whether the sufferer was *also* bound to the cross we do not know; but, to prevent the hands and feet being torn away by the weight of the body, which could not "rest upon nothing but four great wounds,"

Digitized by Google

there was, about the centre of the cross, a wooden projection strong enough to support, at least in part, a human body which soon became a weight of writhing anguish. And then the accursed tree—with its living human burden hanging upon it in helpless agony,....—was slowly heaved up by strong arms, and the end of it fixed firmly in a hole dug deep in the ground for that purpose.... The victim was in full reach of every hand that might choose to strike,.... For indeed a death by crucifixion seems to include all that pain and death *can* have of horrible and ghastly—dizziness, cramp, thirst, starvation, sleeplessness, traumatic fever, tetanus, publicity of shame, long continuance of torment, horror of anticipation, mortification of untended wounds—all intensified just up to the point at which they can be endured at all, but all stopping just short of the point which would give to the sufferer the relief of unconsciousness. The unnatural position made every movement painful; the lacerated veins and crushed tendons throbbed with incessant anguish; the wounds, inflamed by exposure, gradually gangrened; the arteries — especially of the head and stomach — became swollen and oppressed with surcharged blood; and while each variety of misery went on gradually increasing, there was added to them the intolerable pang of a burning and raging thirst; and all these physical complications caused an internal excitement and anxiety, which made the prospect of death itself—of death, the awful unknown enemy, at whose approach man usually shudders most—bear the aspect of a delicious and exquisite release. Such was the death to which Christ was doomed;....

FARRAR'S *Life of Christ.*

Abraham Lincoln was a man of profound faith. He believed in God. He believed in Christ. He believed in the Bible. He believed in men. His faith made him great..... It was after his election, in the autumn of 1860, and but a short time before his inauguration as President of the United States, that in a letter to Judge Joseph Gillespie, he said: "I have read on my knees the story of Gethsemane, where the Son of God prayed in vain that the cup of bitterness might pass from Him. I am in the garden of Gethsemane now, and my cup of bitterness is full and overflowing."

From this it is clear that he believed the Jesus of the Gospels to be "the Son of God."

B. B. TYLER, D.D., "The Religious Character of Abraham Lincoln, in *Holydays and Holidays.* Compiled by Edward M. Deems, A.M., Ph.D., p. 479.

Only in some of the Messianic Psalms do we meet with kindred passages, indicating the reign of the Christ upon the earth, expressed with such emphatic clearness. How marvellous and wonderful this prophecy! Seven hundred years before its fulfilment, it is expressed with such minuteness, that, had the prophet lived in the Apostolic age, he could not have described the Messiah more accurately.

JOHN LORD, LL.D., *Beacon Lights of History,* Vol. 2.

84. Did Isaiah prophesy the death of Jesus and the power of the Cross of Calvary?

Digitized by Google

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 53:8, 12—He was taken from prison and from judgment:.... for the transgression of my people was he stricken.... because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.

Mark 15:1, 27, 28—And straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate. And with him they crucify two thieves;.... And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.

John 3:14-16—And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Acts 16:30, 31—.... Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. Conversation between the Philippian jailor and his prisoners, Paul and Silas.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Augustus was succeeded by his stepson *Tiberius,* ... In this reign occurred the *crucifixion of Christ.*

WEST, *The Ancient World,* p. 467.

Said Luther: "Learn to know Christ and Him crucified. Learn to sing a new song—to despair of your own works, and to cry unto Him, Lord Jesus, Thou art my righteousness;.... Thou hast taken upon Thee what was mine, and given to me what was Thine;.....

D'Aubigne's "History of the Reformation," book 2, chap. 8. Review and Herald Publishing Association, in *Bible Readings for the Home Circle,* p. 114.

I am going to talk to you tonight about the atonement of Jesus Christ, the central and the fundamental doctrine of the Christian religion. The latest attempt to discredit the Christian faith and to explode the whole system of Christian doctrine has just been made in Germany..... This time one of them has written quite a book to prove that no such person as Jesus ever existed..... You don't need a Bible to prove that Jesus lived and walked among the cities and the hills of Palestine.

No, I'm not going to quote Josephus,.... But what about Tacitus? A historian is mighty careful to tell the truth,.... He lived just after Christ and in a long paragraph tells about Him and says He was put to death by a decree of Pontius Pilate, the Roman Governor. The unbelievers of later time worked callous spots on their brains trying to prove this celebrated passage unauthentic. But Edward Gibbon, one of their own kind, the great scholar of the Roman empire, came along and said, "Boys, it's no use; the passage stands every test; it's as genuine as any passage ever penned."

Digitized by Google

Two thousand years ago, they led this man out to die. His death warrant was found by the French army written on a brass plate and signed by John Zorobabel, Raphael Roboni, Daniel Roboni and Capet.

REV. WILLIAM EDWARD BIEDERWOLF, D.D., Author of "A Help to the Study of the Holy Spirit," Etc. *The Atonement.*

Would you be whiter, much whiter than snow?
There's pow'r in the blood, pow'r in the blood;
There is pow'r, pow'r, wonder-working pow'r
In the precious blood of the Lamb.

L. E. JONES, *Christ in Song.* No. 27.

"If the wanderer his mistake discern,
Judge his own ways, and sigh for a return,
Bewildered once, must he bewail his loss
Forever and forever? No—*the Cross!*
There, and there only, is the power to save,
There no delusive hope invites despair;
No mockery meets you, no delusion there;
The spells and charms that blinded you before,
All vanish there, and fascinate no more."

Quoted by Marion Lawrance, in *"Special Days" in the Sunday School,* p. 27.

Look upon Jesus, sinless is He;
Father, impute His life unto me.
My life of scarlet, my sin and woe,
Cover with His life, whiter than snow.

F. E. BELDEN, *Christ in Song No.* 80.

I have just come back from your boys. I have been living among them and talking to them for six months. I have been under shell fire for a month, night and day. I have preached the Gospel within forty yards of the Germans. I have tried to sleep at night in a cellar, and it was so cold that my moustache froze to my blanket and my boots froze to the floor.

* * *

"I am afraid," said a padre to me once, "the boys are sceptical." "Come with me to-morrow," I answered. "I'll prove to you they are not sceptical." We were half an hour ahead of time and the hut was crowded with eight hundred men....When they had finished the hymn I said, "Boys, I am going to tell you the story of my father's conversion."..... I took them to the gypsy tent and told them.... how Jesus came to that tent, saving the father and the five children and making preachers of them all.

I said, "Did my father make a mistake when he brought Christ to those five motherless children?" And the eight hundred boys shouted, "No, sir." "Did he do the right thing?" "Yes, sir." "What ought you to do?" "The same, sir." "Do you want Jesus in your lives?" and every man of the eight hundred jumped to his feet.

Digitized by Google

THE CRUCIFIXION

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

You say they are sceptical where Jesus is concerned. I'll tell you when they are sceptical—when they see the carcicature of Jesus in you and me.

* * *

One night I had got about fifty boys round me in a dug-out, with the walls blown out and bits of the roof off. I had taken some hymn-sheets, for I love to hear them sing..... Among the great hymns they choose are these: "Jesu, Lover of my soul," and I have heard them sing, "Cover my defenceless head," with the shells falling close to them..... And then they will choose:.... "The Lord's my Shepherd, I'll not want," "Abide with me,"..... "Rock of ages, cleft for me," and the one they love, I think, most of all is, "When I survey the wondrous Cross."

* * *

I was talking to one boy—an American;.... "Sonny," I said, "you're an American?" "Yes, sir. I was born in Michigan." "Are you a Christian?" I asked. "No," he answered; "but I should like to be one. I wasn't brought up. I grew up, and I grew up my own way, and my own way was the wrong way...."

Then he continued slowly, "On the Somme, a few hours before I was badly wounded"—he put his hand in his pocket and drew out a little crucifix—"I picked up that little crucifix and I put it in my pack, and when I got to hospital I found that little crucifix on my table. One of the nurses or the orderlies had put it there, thinking I was a Catholic. But I know I'm not, sir. *I am nothing.* I have been looking at this little crucifix so often since I was wounded, and I look at it till my eyes fill with tears, because it reminds me of what He did for me—not this little bit of metal, but what it means."

I said, "Have you ever prayed?" He replied, "No, sir. I've wept over this little crucifix—is that prayer?" "That's prayer of the best sort," I said. "Every tear contained volumes you could not utter, and God read every word. He knows all about it."

I pulled out a little khaki Testament. "Would you like it?" I said. "Would you read it?" He answered, "Yes," and signed the decision in the cover. When I shook hands with him there was a light in his eyes.

GYPSY SMITH, *Your Boys.*

Much of the religious training of the Sunday-school is unnatural for the boy of a strong, virile nature..... Practically all the speakers at Sunday-school gatherings, in relating the conversion of Sunday-school scholars, confine themselves to "sweet, beautiful, blue-eyed, golden-haired, little girls." To the American boy, nearly everybody who has anything to do with religion is supposed to be a woman—from the kindergarten teacher to the angels in heaven. It is not to be wondered at that the presentation of that kind of a religion does not attract the street boy. He loves and worships the heroic. I believe that the reason many boys leave the Sunday-school is because the heroic and manly side of the ideal man Christ Jesus is not taught in such a

Digitized by Google

way as to appeal to this side of boy-life. Philip E. Howard, of the *Sunday-School Times,* tells the following incident: "A crown of thorns, brought from the East, was shown from the platform of a city mission-school by the superintendent. Very little was said to aid in this visible demonstration of the means used in the humiliation of Jesus, but after the school session the roughest youngster in the room made his way alone to the desk. " 'Say, may I look at that?' he said. " 'Yes, answered the superintendent, 'and you may take it in your hands.' "The boy rested the crown of thorns lightly in one hand and touched it here and there with the other. His mischief-breeding eyes were serious. He looked earnestly at the superintendent, and lifted the crown to the platform table. " 'Did he wear one like that?' asked the boy. " 'Yes, very much like that, I think.' " 'Well, if He wore a thing like that, I don't wonder that He had pain.' And the rough little boy of the street made no mischief as he went through the crowd and out of the school that day.

"Here was a phase of the life of Jesus that appealed to him—a waif who was known to be brutally handled at home."

CHARLES STELZLE, *Boys of the Street—How to Win Them,* pp. 62, 63.

I search the world over, all its continents, islands, and seas, for the sweetest, tenderest, holiest spot it holds, and I kneel beneath the gnarled olives of dark Gethsemane. My soul is made stronger, my thoughts purer, my life nobler, by its agony of renunciation. I look upon the cross of shame— a Roman instrument of torture and humiliation. Lo, it shines above every crown in the world, it grows with a radiance more enduring than the sun, throughout the length and breadth of civilization—an emblem of authority, by which princes reign! It gleams in the splendor of heaven above the dome of the universe. It glorifies everything that it shines upon.

* * *

What do I know about afflictions? I know only what every body else knows—that they are guide-posts along the way of the Pilgrimage. If the pathway lies through struggle and pains and fears, patience and love, and foes and fightings, you'r pretty sure to be on the right road. What is this mighty "sea of troubles"? That's the Red Sea. Go right ahead and see the glory of God. This is death in the desert? Speak to the rock, a-quiver with the heat glimmer, and see the fountains of life burst forth. That? That's a king wailing the sorrow of a broken heart in the chamber over the gate. You're on the right way. These? A long line of prison "finger-posts"—Peter and John and Paul and Silas—lots of prisons on the right road. This? A storm on Galilee. Good many storms on the "Jesus Way." This headless body? John the Baptist. That one? Paul. This shadowy garden where the starlight gleams softly on the crimson dew of agony falling on the grass blades? Gethsemane. You have to pass through Gethsemane. This fearful hill? Calvary. This burst of glory and splendor of life and joy?

Oh, Pilgrim, this is Easter morn! You've come the right way, and you're Home, Pilgrim, you're Home!

Digitized by Google

Now, suppose you had avoided all this? Turned back to Egypt? Worshiped Diana, and kept out of prison? Made a little money by the sale of your Christ, like Judas? Gone around Gethsmane? Bowed to Pilate and avoided the Cross?

ROBERT J. BURDETTE, D.D. *Why I Believe in Sickness and Trouble.* Copyright by the Sunday-School Times Company.

The dominant personality in humanity is Jesus Christ, and the most outstanding fact in history is His crucifixion.

ARCHIBALD SCOTT D.D. Minister of St. George's—Edinburgh. Author of *"Buddhism and Christianity—A Parallel and a Contrast."*

Dark roll the waves at thy feet, O beautiful Faith! but the everlasting Rock, bathed in the sunlight of heavenly love, standeth unmoved. The breakers may surge and dash; but thy strength is sure. Dread sinking forms may lift their hideous hands to drag thee down, but purity will keep thee safe. Wrecks of time may toss unanchored, hurrying on to unknown seas, but thou art still looking upward into glory. And above the splashing spray, above the breakers' roar, thy voice floats ever,—"Rock of Ages, cleft for me, let me hide myself in thee; let the water and the blood, from thy wounded side that flowed, be of sin the perfect cure; save me, Lord, and make me pure."

FRANKLIN EDSON BELDEN, *The Crown Jewels of Art*, p. 76.

A MOTHER'S LOVE FOR HER DAUGHTER.

Out several miles from the city of Glasgow, Scotland, there lives a good old Scottish lady. This woman brough up a lovely girl. She raised that girl to the best of her ability to make her a good Scotch Presbyterian. The time came when temptation came before the daughter and she left the mother's home. The mother tried to find her, but could not. Then she said, "There is one thing more I can do; I will go down to the city of Glasgow and I will have my picture taken and hang it on the walls of the houses where my daughter will be apt to visit."

"The good widow did so. She had her picture taken; she had a number of paintings made from it and with her own hands hung them on the walls,.... That mother took her reputation in her own hand and said to the people of Glasgow, "Here is a picture of a woman who has lost her virtue;"....

A few days passed and a scene occurred in one of those buildings. The daughter saw that picture and said, "That is mother's picture," and the thought came to her, "mother still loves me." Just then other girls came in and she said, "That is my mother." She said, "I have a new vision of life. I am going to leave the life of sin; I am going home to-night. Do you see that picture? That is mother's picture. When mother loves me enough that she is willing to lose her reputation as a virtuous woman, I have decided that I am going home." She did.

She went to her old home and there by the lamp light sat the mother knitting in the old Scotch way. The girl had not the courage to go into that room. She went around to the front door and found it open. She said to herself, "What does this mean and mother here all

Digitized by Google

alone? I will just open the door quietly and go up to my room." She found the bed made, the covers turned back, and a candle burning on the stand. She said to herself, "I cannot go to bed here, mother has given my room to someone else," and with her heart breaking, she said, "I must go down and see mother."

She went down. But before she reached her the mother turned around, and she said, "Mother, I have come home. Have I a welcome?" That mother arose and no human words or picture could tell what happened for a few moments. The daughter said, "Mother, I must know by your own voice that I am welcome before I can stay, for I see you have given my room to another. What means the burning candle and the open bed?"

"For thirteen years, the last thing I have done at night was to open the bed and light the candle so that if my daughter returned she would find a welcome."

That mother painted her picture and hung it on the wall, but the Lord Jesus Christ painted a picture on Calvary and he gave to all. If that mother's picture won that girl after thirteen years of riotous life, surely the picture of Christ on Calvary ought to lead us to come to him before going into sin and thus show our appreciation of him.

WILLIAM GUTHRIE, in *The Life Boat.*

O knees which bent in anguish in dark Gethsemane,
Kneel at the Throne of Glory, and intercede for me.

O hands that were extended upon the awful tree,
Hold up those precious nail-prints, and intercede for me.

O side from whence the spear-point brought blood and water free
For healing and for cleansing, still intercede for me.

O head so deeply pierced with thorns which sharpest be,
Bend low before Thy Father and intercede for me.

O body scarred and wounded my sacrifice to be,
Present Thy perfect offering and intercede for me.

For Each Day A Prayer. (On October Seventeenth page.) Selected and arranged by Elisabeth Hamill Davis.

85. Did Mary, the mother of Jesus, prophesy correctly that all generations would call her "blessed"?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Luke 1:46-48—And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

If the brow of any mortal in this world-history of ours deserves a halo, it is the radiant brow of Mary, the mother of Jesus. The art which has circled her head with glory has expressed the universal veneration of man-kind for the truly greatest woman of all time. If John the Baptist was worthy to be called the greatest man born of woman

Digitized by Google

because he was the ordained forerunner and herald of the Christ, does not Mary become the greatest of women because she was ordained of heaven to be the mother of the world's Saviour?

"Blessed art thou among women," said the angel; and every noble soul since then has repeated the angelic salutation, "Blessed art thou among women."...

* * *

In the final, awful scene on Calvary "there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother." What a picture of heroism!.... where all was dark, cruel, frenzied, blood-thirsty, tragical, there stood Mary nearest to the cross, her mother-soul all fearless, undaunted, magnificently heroic. And was it this mother's heroism that inspired the presence of the other women, and of John, the only disciple that had not in cowardice forsaken Jesus and fled? Was it Mary's thought, "I must be, I will be with him and nearest him to the last"? And was the thought of the others, "Let us follow Mary and be with her in this awful trial"? Had not Mary insisted on standing by the cross of Jesus in all the danger and horror of that crucifixion, can we imagine that John would have stood there, or Mary's sister, or Mary Magdalene?

Again does Jesus show his appreciation of his mother's devotion, and, tenderly addressing her in his dying agony, he commends her to the care of John, the disciple whom he loved. Was not Mary's presence there a comfort to her dying Son? The loyalty, the fearless, dauntless, heroic, loving devotion of motherhood shone forth into the darkness of that appalling tragedy as the greatest thing in the world. There is nothing in history to equal it; of all heroic deeds of heroic women or of heroic men nothing parallels that last act of Mary's devotion—*"There stood by the cross of Jesus his mother."* And had not that heroism a blessed reward?

Mary must have longed for one more look of loving recognition, one more word of comfort from Jesus..... "Will he know I am here?" "Will he be able to see me and recognize me?" "Will he speak to me?" These questions must have filled her anxious, agitated heart. He does know she is there; he does see her; he does speak to her! O, so tender, so considerate, so comforting is that recognition! Yes, "Blessed art thou among women!" Here on dark and tragic Calvary, as in angel-encircled Bethlehem, and now in all the earth, and forever, are Gabriel's accents true: "Blessed art thou among women." And for thy faithfulness to Jesus Christ, the world's omnific Saviour, for thy wondrous and heroic motherhood, no less than for the heaven-imposed honor of which the Holy Ghost had found thee worthy—"Blessed art thou among women." For the Nazareth conception, for the Bethlehem birth, for the devotion of Calvary, thy song of exultation passes into prophecy and into music eternal: "From henceforth all generations shall call me blessed." And with thee, heroine of heroines, holiest of mothers, shall heroic motherhood everywhere and always be called—BLESSED.

FRANK M. BRISTOL, Bishop of Methodist Episcopal Church. *Heroines of History*, pp. 270, 289.

Digitized by Google

"A mother's love—how sweet the name! What is a mother's love? A noble, pure, and tender flame enkindled from above, to bless a heart of earthly mould; an ardent love that ne'er grows cold—this is a mother's love."

Quoted in *The Crown Jewels of Art*, by Franklin Edson Belden, p. 272.

86. Did Jesus die of a broken heart; and 487 years before Christ was born, did Zechariah prophesy that the body of Jesus would be pierced?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Zechariah 12:10 (B. C. 487)—And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, ...

Psalm 22:16—. . . . they pierced my hands and my feet.

John 19:33, 34—But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Jesus died of a broken heart. The terrifying cry which all had heard marked the moment of a fatal rupture of the heart. When a Roman soldier thrust his lance into the side of the dead Christ it pierced the lung and then the pericardium, and from the wound flowed blood and water. John alone witnessed the phenomenon. It made so deep an impression on his mind that in extreme old age he spoke of Christ as One who "came by water and blood; not by water only, but by water and blood." John saw something symbolic in this phenomenon; the modern reader sees rather a dreadful witness to the agony which Christ endured. From the moment when the Last Supper ended no food had passed the lips of Christ, and every moment had been crowded with intolerable agony. The physical pain which He endured was but part of this accumulated torture; in His betrayal, in the outrages heaped upon Him by the priests, in the tremendous storm of execration which broke upon Him from every side, in the horror of this exhibition of the diabolism of human nature, in His sense of the weight of all human sin which pressed upon Him, in His desertion not only by man but by God, wave upon wave of agony swept over Him, until the torn and wounded heart could endure no more. He succumbed not to physical injuries, but to the violence of His own emotions. And in this was the proof that God had not deserted Him. By what seems almost a miracle to the Roman soldiers His sufferings were mysteriously abridged. Six brief hours of suffering had brought that sweet release of death which in ordinary crucifixions came only after many hours, and even many days.

WILLIAM J. DAWSON, *The Life of Christ*, p. 423.

87. Did Jesus prophesy correctly his own resurrection?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Mark 10:32-34—And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before them: . . . . And he took again the twelve, and

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE RESURRECTION

Digitized by Google

began to tell them what things should happen unto him, Saying, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles: And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him: and the third day he shall rise again.

John 2:22—When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

The first piece of Christian literature which has an independent existence and to which we can fix a date is St. Paul's first Epistle to the Thessalonians. Lightfoot dates it in 52 or 53; Harnack places it five years earlier. We may say, then, that it was written some twenty years after the Crucifixion. St. Paul is not an historian; he is not attempting to describe what Jesus Christ said or did. He is writing a letter to encourage a little Christian society which he, a Jew, had founded in a distant Greek city; and he reminds his readers of many things which he had told them when he was with them. The evidence to be collected from his epistles generally must not detain us here, but we may glance for a moment at this one letter, because it contains what appears to be the first mention of Jesus Christ in the literature of the world.....

Now the opening sentence of this letter is as follows: "Paul and Silvanus and Timothy to the Church of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace to you, and peace.".... The writers speak of themselves as "apostles," or messengers, of Christ; they refer to similar societies "in Christ Jesus," which they call "churches of God," in Judaea, and they say that these also suffer from the Jews there, who had "killed the Lord Jesus" some time before. But they further speak of Jesus as "raised from the dead," and they refer to the belief which they had led the society to entertain, that He would come again "from heaven to deliver them from the coming wrath." Moreover, they urge them not to grieve for certain members of the society who have already died, saying that, "if we believe that Jesus died and rose again," we may also be assured that "the dead in Christ will rise" and will live forever with Him..... Historically it is of great value as showing how widely within twenty or twenty-five years of the Crucifixion a religion which proclaimed developed theological teaching as to "the Lord Jesus Christ" had spread in the Roman Empire.

The Encyclopaedia Brittanica, Vol. XV, p. 348.

Death is a dragon, the grave its den; a place of dread and terror; but Christ goes into its den, there grapples with it, and forever overcomes it, disarms it of all its terror; and not only makes it cease to be inimical, but to become the greatest blessing to the saints; a bed of rest, and a perfuned bed; they do but go into Christ's bed, where He lay before them.

FLAVEL in *One Thousand and One Thoughts From My Library,* by D. L. Moody, p. 270.

Digitized by Google

COULD GOD RAISE JESUS FROM THE DEAD?

* * *

Now I am not going to waste any time with the so-called scientific arguments against the possibility of this thing. Admit God and impossibility must throw up its hands.....

DID GOD RAISE JESUS FROM THE DEAD?

DeWette, one of the great leaders of Rationalism, labored on this thing with the most precise and scientific investigation and he said, "The Resurrection of Jesus Christ cannot be called into doubt any more than the historical certainty of the assassination of Caesar." This is the statement that made Neander, the great church historian, shed tears when he read it.....

Now if Jesus did not rise from the dead how are you going to account for the empty grave?....

The Empty Grave!.... Even old infidel Schenkel says, "It is an undisputable fact that in the early morning of the first day of the week following the crucifixion, the grave of Jesus was found empty."

WILLIAM EDWARD BIEDERWOLF, Author of "How Can God Answer Prayer?" "A Help to the Study of the Holy Spirit," etc. *The Resurrection.*

The seal of the Sanhedrim, a regiment of soldiers from the town, a floor of rock, a roof of rock, a wall of rock, a niche of rock, cannot keep Christ in the crypt.

TALMAGE, in *Holy-Days and Holidays.* Compiled by Edward M. Deems, A.M., Ph.D., p. 199.

88. Did Jesus prophesy, 37 years before the event, the destruction of Jerusalem by the Roman general Titus in A. D. 70?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Luke xix:41-44 (A. D. 33)—And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace!.... For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies..... shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee;.....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Arch of Titus. A triumphal arch erected at Rome, and still remaining there, to commemorate the conquest of Judea and the destruction of Jerusalem by the emperor Titus. It was erected after his death, A. D. 91, by the senate and people of Rome. It was a magnificent structure, decorated with bas-reliefs and inscriptions, and is of especial interest because its historic bas-reliefs represent the captors carrying in triumph to Rome the golden candlestick and sacred utensils from the Jewish temple at Jerusalem. From these we obtain the best idea of their shape.—Ed.

WM. SMITH, *Bible Dictionary,* Teacher's Edition, p. 51.

Music speaks a universal language, stirring the deep emotions of the untutored savage as well as of the cultivated artist. The effects of music are sometimes said to be merely sensual. It is addressed to the

Digitized by Google

ARCH OF TITUS

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ear indeed, but all influences from without are necessarily conveyed through the medium of the senses, and the sweet tones of music by their harmonious blending convey to the soul a sublime imagery and an inspiration richer by far in meaning than the most eloquent and euphonious forms of speech....

We are able to obtain a true idea of Jewish instruments from the Arch of Titus, at Rome, where the spoils brought from Jerusalem by the Emperor have been exactly represented in sculpture, and it is of interest to learn that the mandolin is the modern representative of the ancient lute, that instrument whose melodious tones accompanied the voices of the sweet singers of Israel.

Not for the hall of revelry, not for the dizzy dance, not to beguile an idle hour, is Music's highest calling, but let her voice be heard in the morning song and the evening vesper of praise to the Author of all that is good and beautiful below.

FRANKLIN EDSON BELDEN, *The Crown Jewels of Art*, p. 124.

89. Did Jesus prophesy correctly that not one stone would be left upon another of the Temple in Jerusalem?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Matthew xxiv:1, 2—And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple:..... And Jesus said unto them,.... There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

When Jerusalem was destroyed, a generation after Jesus' death, his prophecy concerning the temple was fulfilled with terrible accuracy,.... Indeed, there is but one stone in existence of which it is positively known that it belonged to that temple. That is a block of carved marble from the screen that separated the inner courts from the Court of the Gentiles. It was discovered in 1871 by Mr. Clermont Ganneau, and is now in the Royal Museum at Constantinople. It warns Gentiles to go no farther on penalty of death. The last word, "thanaton," the Greek word for death, will be recognized easily by English readers.

At the beginning of his last week, our Lord said that, if the multitudes were to withhold their praises of him, the very stones would cry out. Surely, this one remaining stone which once stood, with others similarly inscribed, as barriers between people of opposing faiths, now witnesses to the power of Jesus Christ, "who hath broken down the middle wall of partition" between Jew and Gentile and made them one in himself.

WILLIAM E. BARTON, D.D. Author of "Jesus of Nazareth," "The Psalms And Their Story," etc. *Day by Day With Jesus*, p. 133.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII.

THE DARK DAY AND THE FALLING OF THE STARS

90. Was the Dark Day-May 19—1780 foretold by John the Revelator?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Revelation 6:12—And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood;

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Josiah Litch, in his "Prophetic Expositor," describes it as follows:—

"I refer to the dark day of A. D. 1780, May 19. That was a day of supernatural darkness. It was not an eclipse of the sun; for the moon was nearly at the full: it was not owing to a thickness of the atmosphere; for the stars were seen. The darkness began about 9 A. M., and continued through the day. Such was the darkness that work was suspended in the field and shop; beasts and fowls retired to their rest; and the houses were illuminated at dinner time.... The sun was *supernaturally darkened.*"....

* * *

A manuscript sermon by Rev. ELAM POTTER, M.A., on the dark day of May 19, delivered on the 28th of the same month, says:—"But especially I mention that *wonderful darkness* on the 19th of May inst. Then, as in our text, the sun was darkened; such a darkness as probably was never known before since the crucifixion of our Lord.....

Mrs. ABIGAIL BAILEY of Vermont, who was twenty-four years old at the time, has given a very interesting account of the dark day of 1780. She was a real mother in Israel, and her testimony was credited by all who knew her. She said:—"....All nature seemed hushed, as though Jehovah was about to make himself known by some mighty act. Every eye was turned upward, every one inquiring, What is going to take place? Some asked, 'Is the Judgment day approaching?' The vessels at the wharves, with sails loosened and colors unfurled, appeared as in mourning on some great occasion. Not a color waved at mast-head, nor a sail showed the least appearance of any wind. The bells rung for meeting. The sailors poured into the house and filled it. Mr. Spring (Rev. Samuel Spring, pastor of the North church in Newburyport), standing at his place, cried, 'O earth, earth, earth, hear the word of the Lord!' In speaking, he excelled himself. The congregation was motionless, and heard with intense and solemn interest."

The American Tract Society bears testimony:—"In the month of May, 1780, there was a *very terrific dark day* in New England, when 'all faces seemed to gather blackness,' and the people were filled with fear. There was great distress in the village where Edward Lee lived; 'men's hearts failing them for fear' that the Judgment day was at hand, and the neighbors all flocked around the holy man; for his lamp was trimmed and shining brighter than ever amidst the *unnatural darkness.* Happy and joyful in God, he pointed them to their only refuge from the wrath to come, and spent the gloomy hours in earnest prayer for the distressed multitude."—Tract No. 379—*Life of Edward Lee....* Herschel, the great astronomer, gives the following testimony concerning the unaccountableness, scientifically, of the darkness:—

Digitized by Google

DARKENING SUN

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

"The dark day in Northern America was one of those wonderful phenomena of nature which will always be read with interest, but which philosophy is at a loss to explain."

G. I. BUTLER, *Facts For the Times.*

Cause Unknown

At the time, some explained the darkness as being due to smoke from forest fires, others to the exceptional rise of vapors and atmospheric dust in the warm spring following the melting of unusually heavy winter snows. But forest fires were not of extraordinary occurance in these regions, and many a springtime since has seen the melting of heavy winter snows and the rise of vapors; yet May 19, 1780, still stands unique in the annals of modern times as "the dark day." However observers and writers disagreed as to the nature of the mantle of darkness that was drawn over New England that day, they were *one* in recognizing the extraordinary character of the event. The facts are fully covered by the statement in the dictionary, "The true cause of this remarkable phenomenon is not known."

What we do know is that the Saviour's prophecy declared, "Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light." And when the time for it came, the sign appeared....

The *Independent Chronicle* of June 22, 1780, printed a letter from Dr. Samuel Stearns, who had been appealed to because of his knowledge "in philosophy and astronomy." First, he disposed of one suggestion that had been made:

"That the darkness was not caused by an eclipse is manifest by the various positions of the planets of our system at that time; for the moon was more than one hundred and fifty degrees from the sun all that day.".....

But as to the real accounting for the phenomenon he wrote:

"The primary cause must be imputed to Him that walketh through the circuit of heaven,.... It was He, at whose voice the stormy winds are obedient, that commanded these exhalations to be collected and condensed together, that with them He might darken both the day and the night; which darkness was, perhaps, not only a token of His indignation against the crying iniquities and abominations of the people, but an omen of some future destruction." Thus men's minds were exercised by this sign "in the sun, and in the moon."

W. A. SPICER, General Conference Secretary. *Our Day in the Light of Prophecy,* pp. 87, 89, 90.

91. Was the falling of the stars as figs from a tree on November 13, 1833, foretold by John the Revelator?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Revelation 6:13 (A. D. 96)—And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

This was literally fulfilled on the 13th of November, 1833. There have been other displays of shooting stars before and since, but not such as is described in the prophecy.

Bishop Burnett, in his "Sacred Theory of the Earth," published in 1697, says:

Digitized by Google

that of the stars of heaven falling to the earth, even as a fig tree casting her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind."—*"The Gallery of Nature"* (London, 1852), p. 140.

W. A. SPICER, *Our Day in the Light of Prophecy*, pp. 93, 94, 96, 97, 99.

An eye-witness of this scene, a Mr. Clarkson, the agricultural editor of the *Iowa State Register*, after reading a statement that modern fireworks surpass even the glory of falling stars, wrote in his paper the following:

"The writer of that sentence did not witness the glorious meteoric shower of November, 1833, when the display was so much superior to any artistic display of fireworks that neither language nor any element in nature can furnish comparisons. The comparison of the sheet-iron thunder of the theaters to the electric display of Providence when the heavens are all on fire, and the earth trembles, would be tolerable. But the awful grandeur of the display on the night of the thirteenth of November, 1833, which made the stoutest heart stand in awe, and the most defiant infidel quake with fear, is never to be compared with the most brilliant fireworks. Those who witnessed the meteoric shower named saw the greatest display that man ever will see until the day that Peter speaks of when the heavens, being on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat. The agricultural editor of the *Register* was out alone with a team and load of lumber all night on that never-to-be-forgotten night. And he cannot now consent to hear of human fireworks being superior to that most grand and sublime spectacle ever before or since beheld by man. Patent fireworks are no nearer this wonderful phenomenon than a lightning-bug is equal to the sun."—*Iowa State Register*, July 12, 1889.

Two other statements regarding this important event will be of interest. They are as follows:

"At Niagara the exhibition was equally brilliant, and probably no spectacle so terribly grand and sublime was ever before beheld by man as that of the firmament descending in fiery torrents over the dark and roaring cataract." *The American Encyclopedia*, edition 1881, article "Meteor."

CARLYLE B. HAYNES, *The Return of Jesus*, pp. 44-46,—1917.

Digitized by Google

FALLING STARS

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII.

PROPHECY AND MODERN INVENTIONS

92. About 2500 years ago did Daniel foretell the coming of our great modern inventions?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 12:4 (B. C. 534)—But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

And in this our day knowledge has been most wonderfully increased. Knowledge of the Scriptures has been increased. We have many agencies now for instruction in the truths of the Bible which were not known a little more than a century ago.

"The London Religious Tract Society was organized in 1799, the British and Foreign Bible Society in 1804, the American Bible Society in 1816, and the American Tract Society in 1825..... A little more than one hundred years ago there was not a Sunday school in the world, the first one being organized by Robert Raikes, at Gloucester, England, in 1784. Now there are more than 285,000 such schools, with over 28,000,000 officers, teachers, and pupils."—

Bible Readings for the Home Circle, pp. 237, 238.

And knowledge in every other line of human endeavor has signally marked the past century..... All the faculties of the human mind have been sharpened to an amazing degree during the last hundred years. Until a century and a half ago men used about the same means of locomotion as Abraham did when he went from Ur of the Chaldees into the land of promise. They rode upon some beast of burden or were drawn in some crude, primitive cart....

But suddenly there came a change. Human genius awoke and began to produce time- and labor-saving devices in great numbers....

The first steamboat was operated in 1807, the first steam printing-press in 1811, railroad cars in 1825, the reaper and mower in 1833 (the year in which the stars fell), the submarine cable in 1851, the automatic air-brake in 1872, electric railways in 1879, and the steam turbine in 1888. Electrotyping was first used in 1837, chloroform as an anaesthetic in 1847, and radium in 1902. The electric telegraph was invented in 1837, the camera in 1839, the sewing-machine in 1846, the typewriter in 1868, the telephone in 1876, the phonograph in 1877, the modern seismograph in 1880, the linotype in 1885, the wireless

Digitized by Google

telegraph in 1895, the moving picture machine in the same year, the monotype in 1896, and the first successful aeroplane in 1903.

Just a few years ago automobiles, aeroplanes, and submarines were unknown. Automobiles are as common today as buggies were twenty-five years ago, and regular passenger-carrying aeroplanes are now being built which will carry passengers faster than the fastest railroad train. On July 9, 1916, the first merchant submarine to cross the Atlantic, a vessel carrying seven hundred fifty tons of freight, landed at Baltimore after running a blockade of enemy cruisers.

There can be no question but that we have reached the day pointed to by Daniel as "the time of the end." We have truly reached the age of the increase of knowledge. On every hand there are indications that the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

CARLYLE B. HAYNES, *The Return of Jesus.*

"Many shall run to and fro." When your grandmother was living, if she had been suddenly told that you could go from New York City to San Francisco in the time that we can to-day, she would have fainted. When in the days of our fathers they left the East and went out West, they told them good-by as if they never expected to see them again, but what was way out West then is only three days away now.

You meet people in jams at the depot and you say to yourself: "Where are all these people going?" I don't know, but they are on their way. How many of you have been in New York City? How many of you in San Francisco? How many of you in Denver? How many of you in Kansas City? How many down South? How many of you up in Canada? See? Many of you have raised your hands on each question. We are going "to and fro," aren't we? Another sign of the end times.

PAUL RADER, Pastor, Moody Church, Chicago. *The Signs of the Times,* p. 15.

It was the writer's privilege to recently visit the Rockwell Aviation Field at Coronado Beach, San Diego, Calif.

This field was established for war purposes, but it is now being made a permanent training camp and at present there are between four and five hundred machines and about 1,500 men stationed there. One stood in amazement as they saw the large number of machines which are being successfully used today in air travel. Some were aeroplanes and some were seaplanes or hydroplanes. The rapidity with which they could travel through the air or on the water was almost unbelievable, some of the machines going at the rate of 135 miles per hour.....

Certainly we are living in an age of great and marvelous inventions and accomplishments. We are living in a time spoken of by Daniel the Prophet—the time of the end: "Many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased." Dan. 12:4. Never was there such a time of rapid transit as now and all perfected in a few short years. These things are all significant.

MARY W. PAULSON, M.D., Medical Superintendent, Hinsdale Sanitarium. "Air Conquest Fulfilling God's Word." *The Life Boat,* April, 1919, p. 109.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV.

PROPHECY AND THE LATE EUROPEAN WAR

Bible Evidence.

93. Did Jesus prophesy the perplexity of the world during the late European War?

Luke 21:25, 26—And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

Secular Evidence.

Prof. Edgar Lucian Larkin, Director of the Mount Lowe Astronomical Observatory, Southern California, and author of "Within the Mind Maze" and other works, makes the following startling statement:

"The mind of the human race is now in a dangerous state. How do I know this? —By reading my simply amazing letters received daily from so many parts of the world, and by conversing with travelers here from nearly every nation on the planet. Human thought is in an abnormal paranoiac condition. A paranoiac is liable to become violent at any moment. So is the human race, now as I write. I would not have the reader see the letters received here; I burn them. They reveal an awful state of mentation.... Some fearful influence is agitating the lower faculties of the mind of man. My books have elicited thousands of replies, and I am alarmed over the thoughts therein. I assert and state and send forth from this mountain summit this day, Feb. 21, 1916, that the mind of the human race is in a dreadful condition."

Arthur G. Daniells, *The World War*, pp. 86, 87.

"The wild onrush of events in a world at war;.... the dazed perplexity of the world's most trusted leaders,—all these are characteristic of the days through which we are living."—Nicholas Murray Butler, President Columbia University, in "A World in Ferment," p. 88.

The world is in perplexity. To all the sufferings incident to human experience in normal times has been added, by the most terrible of all wars, "distress of nations, with perplexity.".....

The year 1918 opened with twenty-three nations at war, and ten more had severed diplomatic relations. The population of these nations is fifteen hundred million,—more than seven eighths of the human race....

The fourth year of the war found fifty million men under arms, notwithstanding the loss of thirty million by death, wounds, and capture, during the first three years of conflict.... Conservative estimates place the cost of the war for the first three and a half years at one

Digitized by Google

hundred twenty-five billion dollars. These figures stagger the human mind. A billion!.... The expenditure of a billion dollars for this war represents a dollar for every minute that has passed since the birth of Christ to the close of 1900. But this war has cost one hundred twenty-five times that sum, which means that in three and a half years these nations have spent a sum equal to one hundred twenty-five dollars for every minute of the Christian era.

During the first ten months the United States has been in the war it has cost the Government seven billion dollars. This is an average expenditure of twenty-four million dollars a day, one million an hour, or $277 a second, day and night. What might not have been accomplished had this money been used for the saving of life and the betterment of living conditions!....

While it is true that the experience of the human race has always been one of unrest, of change, and of conflict, never in all that long history has this spirit been so nearly universal as at the present moment..... The editor of the Washington *Herald*, in the issue of January 26, 1918, says: "A war-crazed world may be a convert to chaos before it finishes its madness. Why not? The unbelievable has ceased to be merely possible.... Russia has become the political insane asylum of the world. It is the maddest thing in a mad, mad universe." ....And the editor of the New York *Evening Sun* (Aug. 8, 1914) asks, "Did such strange cross-currents ever before flow across a page of history?"

ARTHUR G. DANIELLS, *A World in Perplexity*.—1918.

In the year 1914 there suddenly burst upon the world the most terrible war which has ever been known in the history of the race....

Five years ago Sir Edward Grey, addressing the members of the House of Commons, said:—

"It is really as if, in the atmosphere of the world, there were some mischievous influence at work which troubles and excites every part of it..... Some countries are in revolution, others are at war..... Really it is as if the world were indulging in a fit of political alcoholism, and the best that can be done by those of us who are in positions of responsibility is to keep cool and sober."

GEORGE B. THOMPSON, General Conference Field Secretary, *What Do These Things Mean*. 1917.

94. Did Daniel, about 2500 years ago, prophesy failure for William Hohenzollern's dream of world empire?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 2:43 (B. C. 603)—And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

....About two hundred years later the iron monarchy of Rome (as Gibbon describes it) became the mistress of the then known world, symbolized in the image by the legs of iron. The feet of the image, composed partly of iron and partly of clay, was interpreted by Daniel

Digitized by Google

to symbolize a breaking up of the Roman empire..... Several men of great genius since the breaking up of the Roman empire have tried to overcome the force of this text, as Charlemagne, Charles V., Napoleon, and, last of all, William Hohenzollern, and all of these signally failed in their ambitious schemes to re-establish a world empire, and none more spectacularly than the last.

The world has never seen such elaborate preparation and determined persevering effort to reunite the broken fragments of the empire of the Caesars as was made by the German autocracy. What a striking confirmation of the accuracy of divine prophecy we have in the ignominious fall of the pan-German idea of world dominion! How truthfully have the celestial prophets under divine inspiration outlined the great movements in history!

EVANGELIST MILTON H. ST. JOHN, Advertisement in the *Chicago Daily News*, March 10, 1919.

Concerning the kaiser's ambition to establish a great European empire, Newell Dwight Hillis, in the Detroit *Journal* of October 18, 1917, writes as follows: "This war began in 1892, in a meeting in the palace at Potsdam. The kaiser at that time placed in the hands of his advisers a document marked 'Secret and confidential.' The first line held these words: 'The Pan-German Empire.' The second line read, 'From Hamburg and the North Sea to the Persian Gulf.' The third line was, 'Our immediate goal is the Germanization of all nations.' On the second page there was an extract from the kaiser's speech. 'From my childhood, I have been under the influence of five men—Alexander, Julius Caesar, Theodoric the Second, Frederick the Great, and Napoleon. These five men dreamed their dreams of a world empire—they failed. I too have a dream of a world empire—I shall succeed.' "

The foregoing becomes very interesting when considered with a statement the kaiser made to our ambassador, James W. Gerard, which the latter gives in his recent book, "My Four Years in Germany": "America had better look out after this war," and, "I shall stand no nonsense from America after the war."

Of course, the kaiser will fail in his ambitions, just the same as any other ruler would fail, because God, through the prophet, declared of those nations, that they "shall be partly strong, and partly broken," and "they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay."

ARCHER V. COTTON, "Can Man Overturn the Prophecies?"—in *Signs of the Times*, Feb. 5, 1918.

Prof. Theuden, imbued with an astounding vanity,.... declared, as the great war began: "Germany, as the preponderant power in a Pan-German League, will with this war attain world supremacy." And Poehlmann, in considering the good to Germany which would result from the conflict, wrote to his fellow-countrymen, "We shall be an unconquerable people capable of ruling the world."

ROBERT LANSING, Secretary of State, *Prussianism*, Address to Union College, June 10, 1918. Published in the June, 1918, *National Geographic Magazine*, p. 549.

Digitized by Google

With Rome fell the last of the universal empires belonging to the world in its present state..... Its scepter was broken; its throne pulled down; its power taken away. Ten kingdoms were formed out of it; and 'broken' as then it was, it still continues; *i.e.*, 'partly broken'; for its dimensions still continue as when the kingdom of iron stood upright upon its feet. And then it is 'partly strong'; *i.e.*, it retains, even in its broken state, enough of its iron strength to resist all attempts to mold its parts together. 'This shall not be,' says the word of God. 'This has not been,' replies the book of history.

URIAH SMITH, *Daniel and the Revelation*, pp. 70, 72.

95. Did the "intricate relationships".... "existing between the reigning houses of Europe" when the late European war began fulfill Bible prophecy?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 2:43 (B. C. 603)—And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

But notice the fulfilment of this remarkable prediction, given nearly twenty-five hundred years ago. Permit me to direct attention to the intricate relationships now existing between the reigning houses of Europe....

The late Christian IX of Denmark had six children, three sons and three daughters. His eldest son succeeded his father on the throne of Denmark as Frederick VIII. His eldest daughter married Edward, Prince of Wales, and is now Queen Mother Alexandra of England. The second son, Prince William, was elected King of Greece, known as George V of Greece, and was assassinated during the late war between the Balkan states and Turkey. The second daughter married Czar Alexander of Russia, and became the Empress Dowager Dagmar of Russia. Thus the late Empress Dowager Dagmar of Russia and Queen Mother Alexandra of England are sisters. Frederick VIII of Denmark was succeeded on the throne by his eldest son, who is now Christian X of Denmark. His second son, Prince Charles, was elected as king of Norway, where he now reigns as Haakon VII. Thus the kings of Norway and Denmark are brothers. The son of the Empress Dowager Dagmar is the late Czar Nicholas II of Russia; a son of Queen Mother Alexandra is now George V of England; and a son of George V of Greece is now Constantine X of Greece. Thus the rulers of Russia, England, and Greece are first cousins of the kings of Norway and Denmark, and also first cousins of each other, all five being grandsons of Christian IX of Denmark.

Germany and England

The oldest son of the late Queen Victoria of England became Edward VII of England. The oldest daughter of Queen Victoria, Princess Victoria, married Emperor Frederick of Germany, and became the mother of the present Emperor William of Germany. Thus the king of England and emperor of Germany are first cousins, both

Digitized by Google

being grandchildren of Queen Victoria. A sister of Emperor William of Germany, Princess Sophia, married Constantine X of Greece. Therefore the queen of Greece and the emperor of Germany are first cousins of the king of England. And, be it remembered, the king of Greece, as well as the queen of Greece, is also a first cousin of the king of England. The late Czar Nicholas II married Princess Alix of England, a first cousin of both King George of England and Emperor William of Germany, being also a grandchild of Queen Victoria. Haakon VII of Norway married Princess Maude of England, a sister of King George of England. Hence the late czarina of Russia, the queen of Norway, and the queen of Greece are all first cousins, being grandchildren of Queen Victoria, while the queen of Norway and the king of England are brother and sister. The emperor of Germany and the queen of Greece are also brother and sister. Nor is this all. The queen mother of Spain is an archduchess of Austria. And King Alfonso XIII married Princess Ena, another granddaughter of Queen Victoria, and therefore the king of England, the emperor of Germany, the queen of Greece, the czarina of Russia, the queen of Spain, and the queen of Norway are all grandchildren of the late Queen Victoria, being either first cousins of each other, or, as in two instances, brother and sister.

God's Word Still Stands

Thus they are all related, but this intermarrying has not fulfilled its purpose of bringing these nations into closer and more friendly relationships to each other..... Germany hates England none the less because its king is the first cousin to Emperor William. And they are all just as ready to go to war with each other as they would be if their rulers were not all blood relatives. God's word still stands, "They shall not cleave one to another."

CARLYLE B. HAYNES, *The Return of Jesus.*—1917.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XV.

PROPHECY AND TO-DAY—WORLD DRINK TRAFFIC—WORLD EXTRAVAGANCE

96. Is there a message from the Prophets to the nations of to-day?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Hosea 14:1—O Israel, return unto the Lord thy God; for thou hast fallen by thine iniquity.

Isaiah 55:7—Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.

Psalm 33:12—Blessed is the nation whose God is the Lord;....

Proverbs 14:34—Righteousness exalteth a nation: but sin is a reproach to any people.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

To the poor, to the oppressed, to the neglected, the Prophet of old was and is still the faithful friend. To the selfish, the luxurious, the insolent, the idle, the frivolous, the Prophet was and is still an implacable enemy.... The often-quoted lines of Milton

* * *

But herein to our Prophets far beneath,
As men divinely taught, and better teaching
The solid rules of civil government,
In their majestic, unaffected style,
Than all the oratory of Greece and Rome.
In them is plainest taught, and easiest learnt,
What makes a nation happy, and keeps it so,
What ruins kingdoms, and lays cities flat;

DEAN STANLEY, *History of the Jewish Church,* Vol. I, pp. 398, 399.

Isaiah's theology is the divinest and therefore the profoundest in the Old Testament. His statement that he "saw the Lord" (6:1) is none too strong to account for the heights to which his imagination soars.

No wonder that, when Augustine shortly after his conversion asked Ambrose which of the sacred books he should begin first to study, the answer he received was, "The prophecies of Isaiah."

And concerning the statesmanship of the prophet it is likewise little wonder that the celebrated British orator, Edmund Burke, habitually read from the prophecies of Isaiah before going to Parliament. The book of Isaiah is a marvelously profound, unique and exhaustive

Digitized by Google

monograph on the doctrine of temporal and spiritual salvation. And the most marvelous thing about it is the fact that such truths were actually apprehended and committed to writing by any one *before* the time of Christ; for the book of Isaiah is "the gospel before the Gospel.". . . . . Beauty and strength are characteristic of his entire book. He is a perfect artist in words. . . . Isaiah was also an orator. Jerome likened him to Demosthenes. He was likewise a poet.

PROFESSOR GEORGE L. ROBINSON. *The Book of Isaiah;* Introduction and p. 23. Copyright, 1910, by the International Committee of Young Men's Christian Associations.

We think of the prophets as professional preachers, more or less like the men in our pulpits to-day, but their contemporaries must have thought of them first of all as public men of affairs: as statesmen, reformers, politicians, iconoclasts, or traitors,—according to the point of view. As a rule the prophet kept close to his king: "And Nathan said to David, 'Thou art the man.'"

* * *

We moderns are sadly in need of such a hero as Elijah or Hosea. . . .

No man in the Old Testament looms larger in the eyes of the modern world than Isaiah. "By the strength of his personality, the wisdom of his statesmanship, the length and unbroken assurance of his ministry, the almost unaided service which he rendered to Judah at the greatest crisis of her history, the purity and grandeur of his style, and the influence which he exerted on subsequent prophecy,"—by all of this and more, he impresses us as the greatest of all the prophets whose writings are extant. Whenever we use the word prophet, we think at once of Isaiah.

This man has well been styled the king of the prophets. . . . He was "distinguished less by any special excellence than by the symmetry and the perfection of all his powers." He was a theologian, a statesman, a reformer, an orator, a historian, a poet, and more important still, he was a man filled with the Spirit, as saintly as he was strong. As an orator and poet he was master of a style which for beauty and force has been the model as well as the despair of writers and speakers in all ages, and which for vividness of sustained imaginative flights has rarely been approached.

ANDREW W. BLACKWOOD, *The Prophets—Elijah to Christ,* pp. 23, 46, 108, 109.

And so with the nation. It is of age and it can do what it pleases; it can spurn the traditions of the past; it can repudiate the principles upon which the nation rests; it can employ force instead of reason; it can substitute might for right; it can conquer weaker people; it can exploit their lands, appropriate their property and kill their people; but it cannot repeal the moral law or escape the punishment decreed for the violation of human rights.

"Would we tread in the paths of tyranny,
  Nor reckon the tyrant's cost?
Who taketh another's liberty
  His freedom is also lost.

Digitized by Google

Would we win as the strong have ever won,
Make ready to pay the debt,
For the God who reigned over Babylon
Is the God who is reigning yet."

WILLIAM JENNINGS BRYAN, 1900.

"part of the response to the committee appointed to notify him of his nomination as candidate for the presidency of the United States."

"Imperialism"—Quoted in the *Patriot Phalanx*, Nov. 29, 1918.

The war has driven us to believe that religion is the only solution of the world's troubles. We will not trust civilization nor education any more, for these have been tried and failed..... Nothing except a miraculous spread of Christianity can prevent a conflict between the Orient and the Occident.

J. CAMPBELL WHITE, Associate General Secretary and Director of the Interchurch World Movement. March 10, 1919.

The Bible is the only history of the world that really deserves the name.

EVANGELIST MILTON H. ST. JOHN, *Chicago Daily News*, Advertisement. March 10, 1919.

Mr. Charles Dudley Warner, the eminent writer, in an article in *Harper's Magazine*, said: "Wholly apart from its religious or from its ethical value, the Bible is the one book that no intelligent person who wishes to come into contact with the world of thought and to share the ideas of the great minds of the Christian era can afford to be ignorant of. All modern literature and all art are permeated with it..... A boy or girl at college, in the presence of the works set for either to master, without a fair knowledge of the Bible is an ignoramus, and is disadvantaged accordingly....."

Found in *Greatest Thoughts About the Bible*, pp. 55, 56, compiled by J. Gilchrist Lawson, Manager Glad Tidings Publishing Co.

The real Statue of Liberty Enlightening the World is a man or woman, boy or girl, holding up the Lamp of Life.

MARION LAWRANCE, General Secretary International Sunday School Association, *"Special Days" in the Sunday School*, p. 159.

The championship of the oppressed came to be a spiritual passion with the Hebrew prophets.

JANE ADDAMS, *The Spirit of Youth and the City Streets*, p. 152.

God give us angry men in every age,
Men with indignant souls at sight of wrong,
Men whose whole being glows with righteous rage,
Men who are strong for those who need the strong.

DR. CHARLES M. SHELDON, *John Brown*.

For no greater preachers have appeared among men than the Hebrew prophets. The prophetic writings are for the most part sermons. It is amazing that the teachers of homiletics do not enrich their

Digitized by Google

instructions from these masterly discourses. Surely one would think it might be worth while to set students to the work of a reverent analysis of such sermons as those of Jeremiah *In the Gate of the King's House;* or the first sermon of Isaiah to *Backslidden Israel;* or Jeremiah's sermon on *The Broken Covenant.* Is anything in sermonic literature better worth study than Isaiah's discourse on *The Stretched-out Hand?* Might it not be a most rewarding use of a little time for preachers to study the art of Isaiah's sermon, *The Six Woes?* Has anything in the way of sermonic introduction been better done than Isaiah's leading up to his theme in that sermon?

C. I. SCOFIELD, D.D., *What Do the Prophets Say,* p. 25.

If we abide by the principles taught in the Bible, our country will go on prospering and to prosper; but, if we and our posterity neglect its instructions and authority, no man can tell how sudden a catastrophe may overwhelm us and bury all our glory in profound obscurity. The Bible is the book of all others for lawyers as well as divines, and I pity the man who cannot find in it a rich supply of thought and rule of conduct. I believe Jesus Christ to be the Son of God. The miracles which He wrought establish in my mind His personal authority and render it proper for me to believe what He asserts.

DANIEL WEBSTER, in *The Fundamentals,* Vol. III, p. 363.

Rev. Dr. Cortland Myers, pastor of Tremont Temple, Boston, whose subject was "War on German Theology," delivered a whirlwind address. All his oratorical and critical big guns were trained on the object of his attack. Barbarism, ruthless warfare, and the utter disregard for even convention civilization, which have marked the Teutonic military methods of the past three and a half years, he declared to be the inevitable harvest of rationalism and the particular brand of theology which has come to be known as "German."

"It is a moot question," he said, "whether the great war which is now burdening and devastating the world would ever have been commenced, had it not been for German theology. Its dire effects have not only influenced and swayed the land of its inception, but have corrupted the thinking of the very countries which are now engaged in deadly struggle with the forces of the Kaiser. Had the churches of Great Britain and America but tackled and stemmed the insidious flow of German theology fifty years ago, the world would not now be bathed in human blood."

Dr. Myers contended that the pivotal heresy of German theology surged around its denial of the Deity, the Eternal Sonship of Jesus Christ.... Christ was the world's only Redeemer — the Supreme Authority in Christian doctrine and belief. There was no Christianity, no power, no spiritual life, no hope, no victory, without an acknowledgement and acceptance of the Deity of Jesus Christ.

PHILIP I. ROBERTS, reporting the Prophetic Conference,* Academy of Music, Philadelphia, Pa., May 28-30, 1918, for *The Christian Herald,* June 12, 1918.

* In this gathering were men and women from twenty-three states, and also from China, from Africa, from Central America.

PHILIP I. ROBERTS.

Digitized by Google

A book entitled "The Unshaken Kingdom," by Henry C. Mabie, D.D., makes the following fearless statement: "Any university which ignores or overlooks the principles of Christ as its foundation stone does so at its peril, and at the peril of the generation of pupils that is misled by it. The motto of Harvard University, 'For Christ and the Church,' may well be pondered afresh in the light of world conditions even by Harvard itself, and certainly by all its feebler imitators."

Have most American universities and colleges frankly abandoned any such foundation as the Word of God? The series of articles here commenced puts at our disposal the facts that will answer this question. If they are startling and unexpected, that is only the more reason why they should be known.

The Sunday School Times, Oct. 5, 1918, in connection with an article in the same issue, written "By a Recent University Graduate" on the subject —"Was My University Pagan?"

I have said and always will say that the studious perusal of the sacred volume will make better citizens, better fathers, and better husbands.

THOMAS JEFFERSON, quoted in *The Fundamentals*, Vol. III, p. 363.

The Bible is a book in comparison with which all others, in my eyes, are of minor importance, and which in all my perplexities and distresses has never failed to give me light and strength.

ROBERT E. LEE, in *The Gideon*, March, 1918, p. 44.

In regard to this great Book, I have only to say that it is the best Book that God has given to man.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN, in *The Gideon*, July, 1918, p. 50.

Although *Sir Walter Scott*, one of the greatest writers of all time, was surrounded by a library of forty thousand books, on his dying bed he said to Lockhart, his son-in-law, "Bring me the book." When asked what book he referred to, he replied, "There is only *one* book," referring to the Bible.

J. GILCHRIST LAWSON, *Greatest Thoughts About the Bible*, p. 29.

The gravity of the present world situation was recognized by President Wilson in his message to Congress, December 4, 1917. His closing words were:

"A supreme moment of history has come..... The hand of God is laid upon the nations. He will show them favor, I devoutly believe, only if they rise to the clear heights of His own justice and mercy."

These statements were pregnant with meaning. Declaring that we face a supreme crisis, our chief magistrate directs our minds to man's relationship and responsibility to God, the great Sovereign of the universe. His earnest words suggest that the real cause of this world-tragedy lies back in the departure of the nations from God's standard of justice and mercy, and that the only true hope of deliverance rests in a return to that standard....

In view of the long, relentless wars and bloodshed that have culminated in the most terrible war of all time, Charles Fremont Taylor has been led to say:

Digitized by Google

"The world needs peace as it never has needed peace before..... But peace will not save civilization if it is the kind of peace that we have heretofore had—a truce for greater military preparation.....

Yes, the vital factor for insuring true, lasting peace on earth is lacking in the natural heart of man. Until that is supplied, the world's desire for peace and the aims of world leagues of peace are all doomed to sorest disappointment....

There is a remedy for this terrible malady of war, an answer to the cry of helpless humanity, a deliverance from this hard bondage; but it is not by any means of human devising. That remedy, that answer, that deliverance, is found in God. It is provided in His purpose for the human race. And it is revealed to man in that inspired guide book—the Holy Scriptures.....

That Book speaks with the same effect to every race and tongue. Of this marvelous fact Henry Van Dyke says:

"Born in the East, and clothed in Oriental form and imagery, the Bible walks the ways of all the world with familiar feet, and enters land after land to find its own everywhere. It has learned to speak in hundreds of languages to the heart of man. It comes into the palace to tell the monarch that he is the servant of the Most High, and into the cottage to assure the peasant that he is the son of God.... It has a word of peace for the time of peril, a word of comfort for the day of calamity, a word of light for the hour of darkness....

"No man is poor or desolate who has this treasure for his own. When the landscape darkens, and the trembling pilgrim comes to the valley named the Shadow, he is not afraid to enter; he takes the rod and staff of Scripture in his hand; he says to friend and comrade, 'Good-by, we shall meet again,' and comforted by that support, he goes toward the lonely pass as one who climbs through darkness into light."—*The Century Magazine.*

* * *

Men are finding that this world does not meet the highest, noblest, innermost longings of the heart. The editor of *Leslie's* says:

"It is a sobered world..... Armies march in Europe, Asia, and Africa. No seas are without their mines, their battleships and submarines. All skies are speckled with armored aircraft.... Is it surprising that some are inquiring if the end of all things is not approaching? The world may well be sobered by the thought."—

Leslie's Illustrated Weekly Newspaper, March 1, 1917.

The Washington *Post* of Jan. 30, 1916, reports Sir David Beatty, admiral of the British fleet, as saying:

"Surely, Almighty God does not intend this war to be just a hideous fracas or a blood-drunken orgy. There must be a purpose in it; improvement must come out of it.... England still remains to be taken out of the stupor of self-satisfaction and complacency in which her flourishing condition has steeped her. Until she can be stirred out of this condition, until a religious revival takes place, just so long will the war continue. When she can look on the future with humbler

Digitized by Google

eyes and a prayer on her lips, then we can begin to count the days toward the end."

A remarkable statement this, concerning his own country. But the admiral gives counsel that not only England, but all the world, will do well to lay seriously to heart....

In the midst of the greatest world conflict of all the ages the gospel of peace and good will to men is going as never before. As earthly kingdoms are falling to pieces and every human refuge fails, a voice is heard everywhere saying, "Come unto Me, all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls."

ARTHUR G. DANIELLS, *A World in Perplexity.*—1918.

97. Should all nations heed the warning of Isaiah and other Bible prophets against the Drink Traffic?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 5:11, 22—Woe unto them that rise up early in the morning, that they may follow strong drink; that continue until night, till wine inflame them!

Woe unto them that are mighty to drink wine, and men of strength to mingle strong drink:

Habakkuk 2:15 (B. C. 626)—Woe unto him that giveth his neighbour drink, that puttest thy bottle to him, and makest him drunken also, that thou mayest look on their nakedness!

Proverbs 31:4, 5—It is not for kings, O Lemuel, it is not for kings to drink wine; nor for princes strong drink:

Lest they drink, and forget the law, and pervert the judgment of any of the afflicted.

Hosea 7:5—In the day of our king the princes have made him sick with bottles of wine;....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

No single solvent of the sectional spirit can be found like fighting side by side against a common foe. But there cannot be a foe so deadly as the poison that would steal away the brain; and in going forth to war against the two-headed dragon of stimulants and narcotics, humanity shall be fused and moulded into a universal brotherhood.

FRANCES E. WILLARD, *What Frances E. Willard Said,* p. 70.

Frances E. Willard was a patriot of patriots. Love for her fatherland, breathed into her as a child, waxed stronger as the years passed by until it became a passion, and her home-loving heart turned more and more to her "ain countrie." But she could never be a patriot in the sense in which love for one's own excludes love for all other countries, and as her affection for her native land deepened and broadened, it included all other lands until she exultantly heralded the coming day when Humanity will recognize its brotherhood not in word only, but in deed—..... in 1883, Miss Willard wrote: "On an organizing trip to the Pacific Coast and the Puget Sound region we visited

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

HOW LONG WILL THE WORLD BEAR THIS BURDEN?

Digitized by Google

the famous 'Chinatown' of San Francisco, saw the opium den in all its loathsome completeness standing next door to the house of shame. Reputable Chinese women were not allowed to accompany their husbands to California, but here were Chinese girls, one in each of many small cabins with sliding doors and windows on the street, constituting the most flagrantly flaunted temptation that we had ever witnessed. In presence of these two object lessons, the result of occidental avarice and oriental degradation, there came to me a distinct illumination resulting in this solemn decision: 'But for the intrusion of the sea, the shores of China and the far East would be part and parcel of our land. We are one world of tempted humanity. The mission of the White Ribbon women is to organize the motherhood of the world for the peace and purity, the protection and exaltation of its homes. We must send forth a clear call to our sisters yonder, and our brothers, too. We must be no longer hedged about by the artificial boundaries of states and nations; we must utter, as women, what good and great men long ago declared as their watchword: "The whole world is my parish and to do good my religion.' ".....

The Convention at Toronto was our leader's last active work for the World's Union.....

Following Miss Willard's "Summing up of the whole matter" concerning the "Organized Mother-Love" of the World's W. C. T. U., we publish her last message to her White Ribbon sisters the world around —the address which, as President of the Society, she delivered before the Fourth Biennial Convention in Toronto on the morning of October 23, 1897.....

Beloved Comrades from Many Lands:

Nothing more pleasant can be said by old friends as they recount cherished scenes of long ago than the warm-hearted phrase of explanation, "We were brought up together.".... I knew that you were gathering from near and from far; that every continent would be represented in this meeting of which we have all thought so long; that Iceland and New Zealand would meet in this bright auditorium, made fair with flags from many lands. I knew that Oregon and Armenia—brave Oregon, sacred Armenia—would here sit side by side. I knew that the mighty Empire whose center is London, "heart of the world," would be nobly represented, and the blessed Republic, dear to me as the beating of this glad heart, would send its big contingent; that a few prophetic ones from the great wine and beer drinking continent of Europe would learn a new optimism from the cheery Australasian delegates; and that here in the Dominion that has prepared for us with so much beautiful forethought, we should meet this day and feel in our inmost hearts that "We were brought up *together.*".... and so,.... though the equator divided us until now and the salt sea's brine had risen up to keep us severed—still, by all that is most holy and enduring, "We were brought up together."

ANNA A. GORDON, President National W. C. T. U., *The Beautiful Life of Frances E. Willard,* pp. 147, 148, 159, 163, 164.

In answer to the above would say, Yes. The world has lately undergone the most tremendous upheaval in the history of mankind. Above the ceaseless din and roar of cannon along a two hundred mile front, for more than a quadrennium, we have heard the all pervading American slogan "Make the world safe for democracy." In other words, destroy crowns, dethrone kings, put the ban on idleness and premium on labor, discount the idle rich and exalt the industrious

Digitized by Google

poor. If wars must be fought let them be fought in the interests of the whole human race, of equality and equal industrial opportunity. This in brief has been America's message to the world.

There is yet a higher law to be observed, as yet unannounced by any great ruler involved in the late world struggle. That law, however, has been announced by the prophets of history. Briefly stated it is, "Seek ye first the kingdom of God and His righteousness and all these things shall be added unto you." Again, "Woe unto him that putteth the cup to his neighbor's lips." Woe unto England who for eighty years forced the opium traffic upon China, resulting in a hundred and fifty million victims of the opium curse. Woe unto Germany, the father of brewers, among all nations. Woe unto France, the wine-bibber and distributor of wines to the uttermost parts of the earth. Woe unto Italy, giant exporter of rum. Woe unto America, whose outpourings of liquor have cursed the twelve hundred millions of black and brown peoples in Japan, China, India, Africa, South America, and the Islands of the Sea. Woe unto all nations which have passed through the fiery furnace of modern war unless they evolve from their experiences other lessons than those of mere economy.

The League of Nations properly perfected will be a mighty triumph, but unless the voice of prophets as well as of statesmen is heeded ,there can be no perpetual peace, no lasting progress. That nation only will genuinely and truly prosper "whose builder and maker is God."

VIRGIL G. HINSHAW, Chairman, National Prohibition Committee, 1919.

The time is opportune for a great, aggressive, world-wide movement against the alcoholic drink traffic.....

If weaker nations are to be protected from the brutally strong, weak men and women should be protected from those who would coin their weakness and wickedness into cash.

P. A. BAKER, General Superintendent of the Anti-Saloon League, Nov., 1918, as reported in the *Patriot Phalanx*, Edward Clark, Editor.

I come back from my visit to the American army in France thoroughly convinced that WAR PROHIBITION spells the difference today between defeat and victory for the ALLIES. We cannot go on wasting Food and Man Power from the effects of Liquor and expect to win this War. Last winter my wife was in a sanitarium and on several days there was not enough heat, from lack of coal, to keep the institution comfortably warm, yet not a brewery banked its fires, not a saloon went without coal. Hear me, if that thing happens again next winter there will be another Boston Tea Party. God has damned that traffic and He will not pity us very much if we do not

PUT AN END TO IT IN THESE United States! *

DANIEL A. POLING, Associate President of the United Society of Christian Endeavor.

* Words in capitals on one of the Fairbanks Educational Series Monthly Calendar Blotters, 1918.

Digitized by Google

"We are fighting," Mr. Lloyd George declared, "Germany, Austria and the drink, and as far as I can see, the greatest of these deadly foes is drink."

It is an open secret that at one time Great Britain was within five minutes of prohibition. But the Traitor Trade used its influence through telegrams, letters, petitions, delegations, ...

When the story of that five minutes is told it will reveal another Temptation on the Mount, but with a different result. . . .

In return for the compromises which the various Governments have made, and the dividends it has drawn, what has drink done to help win the war? The British Government itself shall tell you. I hold here one of the most remarkable state papers ever issued. The title page states that it is a Copy of the Report and Statistics of Bad Time kept in Shipbuilding, Munitions, and Transport Areas. It bears the name of D. Lloyd George ("Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer") with the declaration that it was Ordered by the House of Commons to be printed May 1, 1915, Printed under authority of His Majesty. . . . . It is a Government document and contains the startling story of the prolongation of the war through the loss of time attending every industry upon which victory depends. . . .

And this Government report tells us how the two Kaisers worked together when France was calling for re-inforcements, the drink Kaiser delaying the sailing of British transports and holding back thousands of liberty loving Tommies from the scene of action, while the German Kaiser engaged the French troops. It even states that "It is now taking three times as long to get ships fitted and ready to sail as it did when war broke out." . . .

Kaiser II made whole transport crews desert; sent firemen on board transports drunk, "making it" as the report says, "impossible to get up a full head of steam," . . . .

While whole regiments of Salisbury Plain were forced to drill and march for twelve months without a gun, and brave Tommies at the front were dying by the thousands for lack of shells and large guns to drive back the enemy, the Government ordered its Directors of Munitions to speed the output. The report is here and it tells how, after investigating the munition factories, every director of munitions wired back "A full munitions output depends on the withdrawal of all public house licenses, not only in munitions areas, but through the United Kingdom."

The German Submarine warfare had just begun. It behooved the British Navy to act speedily. The situation is so alarming that Sir Admiral John Jellicoe telegraphs the Directors of Transports for proposals that will facilitate His Majesty's ships. The replies to the Admiral's telegrams are given here. They charge the condition of affairs to drink. . . .

Recently some Tommies behind the trenches whiled away the hours with a debate on "Will England be better or worse after the war?" And they decided that it would be worse. The argument which

Digitized by Google

won the decision was the wastage through drink of the men of their own battery; seventy-five per cent of whom were total abstainers on their arrival at the front six months before. Today only five per cent have resisted the temptation of the rum ration and wet canteen....

I found, when touring France and England in 1916, that American soldiers serving in the French army had already been taught to regard alcoholic drinks as a necessity....

I was in Great Britain, when Sir Ian Hamilton telegraphed to Lord Kitchener, "Send me a hundred thousand more men, and we can win Gallipolis." But, alas, Lord Kitchener did not have the men to send; for the drink Kaiser had conscripted 250,000 able-bodied Britons of military age, for his Traitor Trade. One day on the water wagon would have freed the hundred thousand men Sir Ian Hamilton needed to capture Gallipolis and the capture of Gallipolis would have ended the war two years ago.

MARGARET A. WINTRINGER, Traveler and Writer who represented the *Sunday School Times* and the *Christian Herald* in Europe.

When one attains his majority, and looks back over the curious pathway of childhood and youth, he may well marvel that he has succeeded in becoming grown. Sixteen years found me well advanced on the road towards invalidism, brought on by over-feeding and indulgence in coffee, tea and sweets.....

In the summer of 1901 the *New York Journal* offered a prize for the most perfectly developed young man in America. There were 5,139 contestants. The judges were Watson L. Savage, A. M., M. D., Physical Director of Columbia University, Harry Beecher, Sporting Editor of the *New York Journal,* and Robert Fitzsimmons. The contest was closed and the prize awarded to me Jan. 6th, 1902..... It would be impossible in a volume of this size to describe in the remotest degree the effect upon the human system of the Four great stimulants, viz., tea, coffee, tobacco, and liquor,....

It looks incredible that a young man or woman who should know the value of health, and a fine physical stature, would take into their system such stuff as liquor, tobacco, tea, coffee and drugs, whose only effect is to tear down and destroy muscular and nervous energy....

If a young man or woman could be made to realize the awful effect of narcotics on the delicate machinery of the human anatomy, they might well stand aghast. The brain is a vast central office, and every nerve in the body is a wire running to it. There are about three billion nerve cells in the brain and spinal cord. Every atom of narcotics taken into the system, first stimulates, and then destroys these delicate cells.

HARRY B. WEINBURGH, *Perfect Health.*

As at Calabar, she found that the greatest obstacle in the way of progress was the general indulgence in rum, which the white people gave the natives in exchange for their palm oil, spices, rubber, and other products. "Do not drink the vile stuff—do not take it or sell it," she begged. "It is like poison to your body. It burns out your life and heart and brings every trouble upon you." "What for white man

Digitized by Google

bring them rum suppose them rum no be good?" they demanded. "He be god-man bring the rum—then what for god-man talk so?" What was there to say? With a heavy heart the White Mother struggled on to help her people in spite of this great evil which men of the Christian world had brought upon these weak, ignorant black children. And she did make headway in spite of every discouragement. "I had a lump in my throat often, and my courage repeatedly threatened to take wings and fly away—though nobody guessed it," she said. For years this brave woman went on with her work among the wild tribes of Nigeria..... No missionary to Africa, save Dr. Livingstone alone, has had a more powerful influence than Mary Slessor.

MARY R. PARKMAN, *Heroines of Service.*—1917.

The liquor traffic is a cancer in society, eating out its vitals and threatening destruction, and all attempts to regulate it will not only prove abortive but will agravate the evil. No, there must be no more attempts to regulate the cancer; it must be eradicated.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

Rome was a giddy city, there was a hot time there every night. The young men knew how to drink the cup of pleasure to the very dregs, and it was just this that in the end caused Rome's downfall.

RABBI HIRSCH, Fairbanks Educational Blotters, Feb. 1910.

The argument of the liquor men that a calamity will follow the abolition of the liquor traffic is based entirely upon the absurdity that if we no longer spend two billion dollars for liquor, we can by no possibility spend it for anything else.

CHARLES STELZLE, *"Why Prohibition!"* p. 57.

The encouragement of drunkenness for the sake of profit on the sale of drink is certainly one of the most criminal methods of assassination for money hitherto adopted by the bravos of any age or country.

JOHN RUSKIN.

Prohibition slams the jail door in the insolent face of crime. During the influenza epidemic in Philadelphia all saloons were closed in a precautionary quarantine. On the sixth boozeless day not a prisoner appeared before the detective bureau in City Hall. Usually there are scores, arrested over night. A prominent textile manufacturer in the northeast section of the city said that as a result of the closing order, "The industrial problem is 70 per cent solved."

The Sunday School Times, October 19, 1918.

"....There can be no doubt that the greatest single factor we can control in the interests of the public health of the nation would be the elimination of alcoholic drink.

"In the slow evolution of civilization many great wrongs persisted for centuries because people had become so accustomed to them that they were accepted as matters of course.....

Digitized by Google

"Among these great wrongs, too long tolerated, none has done more injury to mankind than drink. Events now are moving rapidly in the convulsions of a world war. Women have demanded and will obtain, as they deserve, their equal rights. The swiftly moving course of events is writing the death warrant of autocracy and rule by divine right.....

"I want to plead for the united action of the organized medical profession of this country to secure protection by law against the injury that drink is doing to our people, not as a political measure but as the most important public health measure that could be secured..."

DR. ARTHUR DEAN BEVIN, President of the American Medical Association, as reported in *Chicago Tribune*, June 12, 1918.

THE LIQUOR TRAFFIC.

If the secret records of the brewing and distilling industries were ever brought to light they would tell a story of social and political corruption unequaled in the annals of our history. If the veritable narrative of the American saloon were ever written, it would make the decadence of Rome look like an age of pristine purity in comparison.

Whisky, wine, and beer never caused half as much injury to society as the manufacturers and purveyors of these beverages. If these men have not made a practice of committing murder and arson it is because these crimes did not seem immediately profitable. The liquor business has been the faithful ally of every vicious element in American life; it has protected criminals, it has fostered the social evil, and it has bribed politicians, juries, and legislatures.....

The demand for the abolition of the liquor traffic is the expression of a ripening conviction that it is conducted by nefarious means for nefarious ends.

"After us the deluge," seems to have been the philosophy of the liquor men—but now the deluge seems to be on the point of breaking.

Chicago Tribune.

There can be no peace between me and the liquor traffic. It's war to the death.

WILL K. REEME, as reported in the *Kansas City Star*, March 31, 1916.

The most wicked and inconsistent condition of the past has been the spectacle of profiteering off the wreckage of food stuff and the souls and bodies of men through alcoholic beverages. While our boys in France were sacrificing their lives in the interest of equity, justice and humanity, we countenanced this frightful carnage.

Jesus Christ came to this world not to regulate or palliate the works of the Devil but to destroy them. (1 John 3, 8.)

If militancy was ever justified, warfare on the infamous booze interests called for it loudly and imperatively.

WILL K. REEME, A would be John Brown Prohibitionist, 1919.

It took far more moral and physical courage to battle for prohibition and woman suffrage when those reforms were exceedingly unpopular, than it did to face the foe at Gettysburg or defend the Re-

Digitized by Google

public of Mexico against its invaders. And I am more proud of my record as a soldier in the war for righteous reform than of my many years of service on bloody fields of battle.

JOHN SOBIESKI.*

Let England's Drink Victims plead in the following powerful quotations from *The Fiddlers* by Arthur Mee of Great Britain.

The Drink Trade gave Germany her greatest weapon in the war by helping to make the bread famine....

It is not denied by anybody who knows the facts that drink has been the greatest hindrance of the war.....

The biggest thing ever set up on earth is the Great Pyramid. It is 80,000,000 cubic feet. The food destroyed by drink during the war would make two Great Pyramids, each bigger than the Pyramid of Egypt.

The longest British railway is the Great Western; it is over 3,000 miles, but it would not hold the food destroyed by drink since war began.....

But we will call the witnesses to these drink-ruined soldiers' homes,.... We will call a few here and there, knowing that for every one called are hundreds more that can be called,...

A soldier came home ill from France, hurried from Waterloo to his home, and found the door locked. He knocked, and his little boy's voice came—"Is that you, mother, and are you drunk?" Hearing his father's voice the excited lad opened the door. "Where's mother?" asked his father. "Mother?" said the boy; "she's drinking. She comes home drunk night after night now and knocks the kids about. She daren't hit *me;* I'm fair strong, dad; but the other... And as for baby, she never does nothing for her. I and Freddy takes turns, but I dunno what to give her to eat sometimes."

Midnight passed before the mother appeared, helplessly drunk. "Did you expect me to sit at home weeping for you?" she said. The next morning, broken with tears, she promised to mend her ways. The soldier went into hospital, and there he had a letter from his boy. This is part of it:

"Dear Dad, I write to let you know mother is going on awful. She has took all Fred and Timmy's clothes to the pawnshop, and she hit Selina on Saturday with the toasterfork and cut her face. She cried all night, it hurt her so. She is drunk every night and some nights dussent come back at all. She daren't hit me, but I am getting afraid about baby. We are all very hungry and miserable."

The soldier got leave, found his wife had disappeared, and, finding charity for his four little ones, he left his ruined home and went back to the hospital.

Facts in possession of the Author....

* John Sobieski, heir to the throne of Poland, an American citizen, patriot and reformer, and a hero of three wars.... At a glance one recognizes nobility in his bearing, either of lineage or of character, and acquaintance proves that it comes from both. For John Sobieski, the ardent American patriot, is a descendant of King John Sobieski of Poland, who in 1683, in a mighty battle at the gates of Vienna, with a little army of Poles, repulsed ten times their number of Turks and rescued Christendom from a Moslem invasion.... The present John Sobieski is sixth in the direct line through the oldest sons of the oldest sons of the warrior monarch, King John III.

CARRIE LEE CARTER-STOKES, in an article on John Sobieski, published in *The Golden West Magazine,* Los Angeles, April, 1919.

Digitized by Google

A soldier who was wounded at La Bassée, a total abstainer until then, was sentenced at the Old Bailey for killing his uncle while drunk. He was a newsvendor, aged 21, and had no memory of the tragedy in which he killed his uncle at a Christmas party.

Facts in "Daily Chronicle," January 13, 1916.

Drunkenness among soldiers and sailors is appalling....

Facts in "Inverness Courier," May, 1915.

An officer was left in charge of a British ship. Mad with drink, he went among the men and shot one dead. He is now in an asylum. *Case reported to the Admiralty....*

The thing cannot be justified. It is the blackest tragedy of this whole war that, in fighting for freedom in Europe, the free sons of the British breed have to face this war-time record of waste at home, with its inevitable toll of debauchery and crime.

Editorial in "Toronto Globe," James A. Macdonald, Editor.

Arthur Mee of Great Britain—*The Fiddlers.* Reprinted in the United States by The American Issue Publishing Company.

Kansas: What has thirty years of Prohibition done for us in Kansas?

The death rate in Kansas is only ten to every 1,000 inhabitants, and we feel assured the abstinence from liquor gives that low rate of mortality;.... Only $1.25 was spent on an average by each person for intoxicating liquors during the year while one of our sister states spent $28 for the same purpose..... Our illiterates are fewer than in any other state in the Union....

Eighteen counties have no poor farms, and one of our best counties, Barton, has no use for its poor farm, but turns it into an asset by renting it. Twenty-nine counties have no inmates in their poor farms.....

Ex-Governor George H. Hodges, 1916, in *American Prohibition Year Book,* 1916. Edited by John A. Shields, published by The Prohibition National Committee.

Maine: Uninfluenced by party politics, there has never been a time since 1858 when there has been a doubt that the people were in favor of what is popularly known as the "Maine Law."

Governor Wm. T. Haines, in *American Prohibition Year Book,* 1916.

General Leonard Wood, speaking to a joint session of the Kansas Legislature, said: "You gave me a dry country in which to train your men. That eliminated 80 to 85 per cent of the evil conditions and diseases at one stroke. Alcoholic dissipation gives the Army and Navy most of their trouble."

Authority—Fairbanks Educational Series Monthly Calendar Blotters, June, 1919.

The liquor problem is a world problem and the reform institution which would solve this problem must be world-wide in its scope....

Twelve hundred and fifty clergymen of the Church of England together with four hundred and seventy-two women in English rectories today own more than $8,000,000 worth of stock in English breweries.....

The United States, Great Britain, France, Russia and Japan, with their possessions and spheres of influence, include one-half of the

Digitized by Google

world's land area and 75 per cent of the world's population. These nations hold the commerce of the world in their hands. World prohibition rests largely with them, for what they do will be the determining factor in the final decision of the liquor question of the civilized world.

ERNEST H. CHERRINGTON, General Manager of the Publishing Interests of the Anti-Saloon League, Nov. 1918, as reported in the *Patriot Phalanx.*

Replying to your telegram, would say that I am in favor of National Prohibition during the war and forever after.

DAVID B. FORGAN, President National City Bank, Chicago, to Prohibition Congressman Randall.

DOCTORS KNOW ABOUT IT.

Soon after the Medical Society of Detroit, comprising virtually every reputable physician in the city, had voted in favor of the prohibition of the liquor traffic, one of the members, Dr. Hugh Harrison, said for publication:....

"The awful crimes committed against their children by men who drink are too terrible to brood over. The moderate drinker is weakening himself to an extent that his children may be born without a fair physical or mental chance in life. Such children die at the first attack of disease."

Doctors have the best chances to see the horrible evils of the saloon.

The sin of intemperance must call in the doctor before long; and then, the undertaker.

AESOP JONES, in *The Christian Endeavor World,* Sept. 5, 1918.

High license has coined buzzard dollars to lay on the eyes of a nation's dead conscience. Every penny of it symbolizes our shame.

CLARENCE T. WILSON, General Secretary Board of Temperance, Prohibition and Public Morals—Methodist Church.

The saloon is an evil thing in itself.

Chicago Evening Post, in an editorial.

My experience has shown me that one of the principal benefits which prohibition offers is protection to the farmer. One of the most pathetic sights which I have personally witnessed is that of the man who works with becoming industry and vigor during the week at hard labor on the farm, for small wages, and on Saturday night invests the larger part of his week's earnings in....whiskey....

In order, however, to secure immunity from this curse, prohibition must be wider than the county or the state. It must be nation wide, it must be world wide. I have been long coming to this opinion.

HARVEY W. WILEY, M.D., Formerly Chief Chemist of United States Department of Agriculture, author of "Foods and Their Adulterations," etc. *The Lure of the Land,* pp. 69, 72. 1915.

Alcohol by diminishing the moral and material strength of the Army, is a crime against national defense in the face of the enemy.

MARSHALL JOFFRE.

And when the victory shall be complete—when there shall be neither a slave nor a drunkard on the earth—how proud the title of

Digitized by Google

that land which may truly claim to be the birth-place and the cradle of both these revolutions that shall have ended in that victory.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

America practically holds in her hands the future of the liquor traffic throughout the world....

What if countless thousands go to jail and hundreds are sent to the death-chair because of the liquor business—what if millions of lives are lost in every generation—let the traffic in alcohol go on!

Have we gone mad?..... Do the bodies and the souls of our loved ones count for nothing?

Isn't it time that we came to our senses and forever destroyed the liquor business?

CHARLES STELZLE, *Why Prohibition*, pp. 41, 68.—1918.

In Iceland, where absolute prohibition has had a proper trial, only one policeman is needed for a population of 80,000 persons, and crime is well nigh unknown. There is scarcely an illiterate person in the whole country, education being compulsory, and every boy and girl of eleven years of age being able to read and write. Pauperism is almost unknown. Even in the prohibition states of America, where suppression of the liquor traffic has had a very incomplete trial, immense benefits have been derived. Kansas, under prohibition properly enforced, has become the weathiest state in the United States, per capita of the population.

J. GILCHRIST LAWSON, *World Wide Reforms*, p. 25. 1913.

"SWEEP BEER AWAY!" says Harry Lauder, the Scotch Comedian in article in *Christian Endeavor World*. "No man can be successful and drink. It does not matter who he is, soldier or civilian. When I started on the stage, I took a vow that I would not touch, taste or handle strong drink of any description until I had made a name for myself. Now that I have made my name known I see more necessity for doing the thing that is right than ever before. There is more need now for me to be sober and steady, for I am looked upon as an example." Mr. Lauder further says: "When a man has been hit as I have been, there are three ways open to him—Drink, Despair, or God; and I am looking to God for the consolation and courage I now need."

NOTE—While Sir Harry Lauder was entertaining the men in the trenches, his own son was killed in the service of his country.

Fairbanks Educational Series Monthly Calendar Blotters, July, 1919.

Years ago, in calling one afternoon, I heard and saw the sad story of a home gone wrong. I saw the suffering, shoeless children. I looked into the worn face of a patient, godly mother who worked on into the night to save her little family. I sought the husband, found him drinking, as was his wont, in a nearby saloon. Back of that careless drunkard's life I saw a man of splendid leadership and power. A day or two later I faced him in his shop, told him who I was, told him I wanted to talk with him, asking him if he would take a walk with me Saturday afternoon, received a negative answer, took hold of his great, rough, square muscular hand, and said with

Digitized by Google

PAY DAY

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

a smile: "Well, I won't let you go, I am coming back to-morrow and the next day, and mean to keep asking you until you say you will." A day or two, and he consented, none of the men laughed at him,—he wasn't the kind of a man men laugh at. He was the uncrowned monarch of that shop, and his life of sin and carelessness was meaning the ruin of scores of others, although he knew it not.

We walked that afternoon over the hills together into the woods. At last I faced him. I asked him what he thought of himself, what he thought of his shoeless boy, what he thought of his half-starved infants, what he thought of his noble wife, fighting to the death alone, still loyal to him, patient in her suffering, uncomplaining in her work. I asked him what he thought God brought him into the world for, why God gave him his influence, how he was using it? He was big enough to annihilate me, but I did not care much then whether he did or not. But we did not stop there: I spoke of the love of Christ for him, that the Son of God died to save his soul, and that Christ would help him to use his leader-ship to help other men. I might have told him of the men in that shop whom his career was damning, but we had gained another vision. Somehow, in that forest, we saw another woodland, and it was a garden. We looked off on another hillside, and on it were three crosses, and there, upon our knees alone, that great strong man broke his heart in sorrow and asked to be forgiven, and gave his heart to God. Of course, he had a fight, but he won out. A year later the owner of that shop told me he would take his own wife and daughters through that building without the least sense of fear, for they would hear nothing that he would not care to have them hear, but a year before he did not care to enter himself. That same shop declared a dividend and gave a pro-rata increase to the men on the basis of profit-sharing, as the result of the kind of work they had begun to do.

Men, God wants *pivotal men,* find them, pray for them, work for them, work with them patiently, win them, and *"where Saul has slain his thousands, David will slay his tens of thousands,"* and we will discover what Jesus Christ can do with a strong man, one loyal to Himself.

REV. JOHN TIMOTHY STONE, D.D., Author of "Footsteps in a Parish"; *Recruiting for Christ,* pp. 59-61.

98. Should the women of the world heed the warning of Isaiah against extravagance in dress?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Prophecy Isaiah 3:16, 18-23, 25.

Moreover the Lord saith, Because the daughters of Zion are haughty, ...

In that day the Lord will take away the bravery of their tinkling ornaments about their feet, and their cauls, and their round tires like the moon,

The chains, and the bracelets, and the mufflers,

The bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the headbands, and the tablets, and the earrings,

Digitized by Google

The rings, and nose jewels,
The changeable suits of apparel, and the mantles, and the wimples, and the crisping pins,
The glasses, and the fine linen, and the hoods, and the veils.
Thy men shall fall by the sword, and thy mighty in the war.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

Go back to the simple life, be contented with simple food, simple pleasures, simple clothes. Work hard, pray hard, play hard. Work, eat, recreate, sleep. Do it all courageously. We have a victory to win.

HOOVER.

President Hibben, of Princeton University, says: "A world in need has sent forth across the waters its cry to us for help. We cannot respond and at the same time continue our comfortable, easy-going mode of existence. The times demand sacrifice, and sacrifice can no longer be free from suffering."

The Gideon, July 1918, p. 13.

After my first ride on the top of a bus down Fifth Avenue, my observations of the dresses which were the last word of the fashions of the great city left me at first with a sympathetic feeling akin to that which I had felt for the involuntary infraction of nature's food laws which had faced us in Labrador, for combined with the humor of it here was such a strong element of pathos—especially in a country protesting against the shoes of Chinese women.

• • •

The first voyage of the Mayflower was the classic protest against wealth rule and wealth worship, no less than against soul-damning conventionalism.

WILFRED GRENFELL, M.D., The Hero of Labrador; *The Soul of Battle Creek*.

A Bulletin prepared in 1912 by the United States Bureau of Education states that:

400,000 children have organic disease
1,000,000 children have tuberculosis in some form
1,000,000 children have spinal curvature
1,000,000 children have defective hearing
4,000,000 children are suffering from mal-nutrition
6,000,000 children have enlarged tonsils, adenoids or other gland diseases
10,000,000 children have defective teeth
15,000,000 children need attention for physical defects which are prejudicial to health....

The appalling sacrifice of infants indicates that nearly 200,000 American women entered into the shadows of motherhood unfit to bring their children into the world, or having brought them into the world, were unfit to care for them. With such a background as this, our proud parade of Paris fashions in softly folded tissues, delicate silks, and wools, ravishing creations, takes on the leer of refined debauch.

Digitized by Google

Two hundred and thirty-five thousand two hundred and sixty-two little children in the rear of that parade were denied the right to enter their "teens" and many thousands of young men and women facing life with all its possibilities went wearily into the great beyond while the heart of womanhood was brooding over the captivating styles of dress.

ALFRED W. MCCANN, Member of Vigilance Committee, The Associated Advertising Clubs of America, *Starving America*, pp. 19, 20. 1919.

Give me a look, give me a face,
That makes simplicity a grace:

BEN JOHNSON.

Nothing is more simple than greatness; indeed, to be simple is to be great.

Emerson, in *The Cyclopedia of Practical Quotations*, p. 555.

WHY STOP HOOVERIZING?

If Hooverizing was a good measure healthwise during the war, why stop it now?

During the war we were made to live the simple life and we benefited in many ways by it. We learned that we could dispense with many of our luxuries and be better men and women by so doing.

We learned to Hooverize our food, to Hooverize our dissipations, our time, our expenditures in every way. We were determined to eliminate the non-essentials and we concentrated our efforts on the essentials of life. By this means we were enabled to accomplish more than ever before in the same length of time.

Keep on Hooverizing and we will become a more productive, thrifty, healthy people.

MARY W. PAULSON, M.D., Medical Superintendent, Hinsdale Sanitarium, *The Lifeboat*, March, 1919.

What Lloyd George so sternly told the churchmen of England needs to be told in America, in Germany, in France, in Japan. I tell these stern words to you, for your nations and for the honor of your flags. Hear them: 'The stain on your national flag is as deep if that flag floats over slum-bred children and over ill-paid, ill-fed, ill-housed men and women, as if it were to droop in defeat on the field of war."

JAMES ALEXANDER MACDONALD, Editor *Toronto Globe*, addressing World's Christian Citizenship Convention, Portland, Oregon, 1913.

Be plain in dress, and sober in your diet;... Lady M. W. Montagu—*Summary of Lord Littleton's Advice.*

The Cyclopedia of Practical Quotations, Revised Ed., p. 23.

HOW IS OUR RELIGION?

In an article that appeared in the *Century Magazine* for January, 1915, entitled "The Bondage of Modern Religion," by the Rev. B. Gavan Duffy, the following statement is found: "The plain, simple truth seems to be that the old charm, which once attracted and held the hearts of men, has somehow or other gone out of the modern life of religion."

Digitized by Google

Further, he quotes from a recent statement by Dr. John Neville Figgis, of London, said to be possibly the keenest and brightest intellect in the Anglican communion. Speaking of the corporate attitude of Christians toward the masses, Dr. Figgis says: "Is it not the case that all the horrors of our present system are felt less keenly by church people than by many who are not Christians at all? Mr. Bernard Shaw once said that all religious organizations in this country [that is, England] have sold themselves to the rich... I am not saying that it is true, but I am persuaded that it is far truer than the officials of any religious organizations would admit."

Mr. Duffy says further: "If one permitted one's self to catalogue the signs of bondage to the mammon spirit in our modern ecclesiastical life, from the dollar appraisement of spiritual values to the six-thousand-dollar-a-year apartments which deck the splendor and successes of some who preach the gospel of the penniless Christ—well, where would one stop?"

ELMER E. ANDREWS, Vice President for North America for A General Conference, "Is the World Getting Better?" in *Signs of the Times*, March 13, 1917.

I believe the time has come when women of the world should take heed to the 3rd Chapter of Isaiah and spend less on personal adornment and extravagances. If they would think of the thousands of Armenians and others, dying of starvation, they would surely realize it is more blessed to give than to receive and not invest in things that are superfluous.

In a recent Gideon platform meeting, where I made the appeal for funds for the purchase of Gideon Bibles, for the lonely hotel rooms of our state, a young woman placed a gold bracelet in the collection and the same was converted into money and twenty Gideon Bibles were purchased with it and placed in a small hotel with that number of rooms. These Bibles will touch the lives of twenty men every night.

How much better it is to invest in things that will count in eternity. The action of this consecrated woman, in giving what she had so men could be won to Jesus Christ will always be an inspiration to keep me busy "Until He Come."

E. L. VOGEL, Sr., President Illinois Gideons. 1919.

There are marriage feasts brilliant with orchids, each spray of which cost more than could be earned in a twelvemonth by the white-faced woman who, at starvation wages, made the garments of the bride, and the service of silver and gold that gleams on the festal board cost more than two hundred families in hovels of that city spend in a year.... The only medical faculty which will be recognized by the happy people of that future which hurries smiling on, is Doctor Diet, Doctor Sleep, Doctor Exercise, and Doctor Dress Reform. Commend me to this blessed quartette, who are today the heaven-sent allies of the temperance movement.

FRANCES E. WILLARD, *What Frances E. Willard Said*, pp. 86, 113.

Digitized by Google

People who have hearts are simple in all their ways.

HONORE DE BALZAC.

Simplicity sometimes penetrates unconsciously very deep.

VICTOR HUGO.

True humility,
The highest virtue, mother of them all.

TENNYSON.

The manners of women are the surest criterion by which to determine whether a republican government is practicable in a nation or not.

JOHN ADAMS, *The Cyclopedia of Practical Quotations*, Revised Edition, p. 281.

THE CALL OF WALL STREET.

The "Wall Street Journal,"... recently published an article under the head of "Business Revival," which would fit any family or church publication. More recently, it has republished an article which it originally printed some years ago (1906), entitled, "Is There a Decline in Faith?".... Because of the article itself and also for the fact that it appears in a journal which circulates so extensively among a class of people who are not popularly supposed to spend much time on their knees, we are led to print it in full:

IS THERE A DECLINE IN FAITH?

He who believes in a future life is a citizen of two worlds.... To such a person, what takes place here and now is not unimportant, but it is infinitely less important than what shall take place hereafter.... He is not indifferent to the rewards which may come in this world to industry, endeavor and opportunity; but failure, illness, poverty, abuse,—what do these amount to, to a man who believes he is to enjoy the sublime privileges of eternity?....

Faith in eternal life smooths out every inequality and injustice of the present life under the great weight of the infinite. It makes the poor feel rich, and gives to the unfortunate a sense of heirship to the Almighty. It makes the rich feel a sense of grave responsibility and trusteeship.

Now, it is not needful for this discussion to consider whether such a faith is reasonable or not. The Wall Street Journal has no concern in theological discussions.... If there has been a marked decline in religious faith, that fact must be of profound, far-reaching significance. It alters the basic conditions of civilization. It becomes a factor in the markets. It changes the standards and affects the values of things that are bought and sold....

The question, therefore, is of practical, immediate and tremendous importance to Wall Street, quite as much as any other part of the world. Has there been a decline in the faith in the future life; and, if so, to what extent is this responsible for the special phenomena of our times, the eager pursuit of sudden wealth, the shameless luxury and display, the gross and corrupting extravagance, "the misuse of swollen fortunes," the indifference to law, the growth of graft, the abuses of great corporate power, the social unrest.... the appeals to bitter class hatred?....

Whatever may be a man's own personal beliefs, there is no one who would not prefer to do business with a person who really believes in a future life. If there are fewer men of such faith in the world, it makes a big difference; and if faith is to continue to decline, this will require new adjustments. There are certainly, on the surface, many signs of such a decline. Perhaps, if it were possible to probe deeply into the subject, it might be found that faith still abounded, but it is no longer expressed in the old way. But we are obliged to accept the surface indications. These include a falling off in church attendance, the abandonment of family

Digitized by Google

worship,... the growing up of a generation uninstructed as our fathers were in the study of the Bible, the secularization of a portion of the Church itself, and its inability in a large way to gain the confidence of the laboring people. If these are really signs of a decay of religious faith, then, indeed, there is no more important problem before us than that of either discovering some adequate substitute for faith, or to take immediate steps to check a development that has within it the seeds of a national disaster.

The trend of thought manifested to-day in a direction other than that against which we are warned in this article, is one of the remarkable side phases of the European conflict.

May Trade Letter of the Union National Bank, Louisville, Ky., April 30, 1915.

With two-thirds of the world, representing more than twenty nations, already dragged into the widening vortex of the present war; with more than five million of the finest youth of Europe already slaughtered on the battlefield, with twenty million who have already been wounded, nearly forty million under arms, and whole nations organized for war and the manufacture of munitions; with the flood-tide of impurity and immorality which war has brought in its train; with the barbarism and cruelty, poison gas, flaming oil, and organized destruction used at present on the battlefields of Europe, is it not time for the Church to set her own house in order, to humble herself with shame in the very dust for her criminal impotence and worldliness and sin, and to return to her crucified Lord and Master? Is it not time that we seek a new vision of his face, to renew our consecration before him, and to seek a vital and life-giving message first for ourselves and then for the world about us?

Sherwood Eddy, Associate General Secretary Foreign Work, International Y. M. C. A. Quotation found in *The Immortality of Love and Service* —An Easter Pageant, by Professor H. Augustine Smith, Boston University. 1918.

With a note of pride in his tone, a minister once said to a friend of mine: "You know, in the church where I am pastor, we have no working people at all." And, I think, he might have added—"Not even the Carpenter of Nazareth."..... And so we go on, dividing society into upper, middle and lower classes, but Christ knows nothing of these distinctions. With Him there are but two classes—those who serve their fellows, and those who don't.... If the rich will be content without extravagance and vulgar display, there will be enough of the good things of life to go round;.... The rich have too much wealth to be happy and the poor too little.

Thomas Tiplady, Hon. Chaplain to the Forces, Author of "The Cross at the Front," "The Soul of the Soldier," *Social Christianity in the New Era.* 1919.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI.

PROPHECY AND FOOD CONSERVATION.

99. Ten days after Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael and Azariah were captives in the court of Babylon, did their health and intellects presage the call of Mr. Hoover, made in 1917, for the people in the United States to eat less meat, sugar, etc.?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Daniel 1:8, 11, 12, 15, 17-21—But Daniel purposed in his heart that he would not defile himself with the portion of the king's meat, nor with the wine which he drank:.... Then said Daniel to Melzar, whom the prince of the enuchs had set over Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, Prove thy servants, I beseech thee, ten days; and let them give us pulse to eat, and water to drink.... And at the end of ten days their countenances appeared fairer and fatter in flesh than all the children which did eat the portion of the king's meat. As for these four children, God gave them knowledge and skill in all learning and wisdom: and Daniel had understanding in all visions and dreams. Now at the end of the days that the king had said he should bring them in, then the prince of the enuchs brought them in before Nebuchadnezzar. And the king communed with them; and among them all was found none like Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah: therefore stood they before the king. And in all matters of wisdom and understanding, that the king inquired of them, he found them ten times better than all the magicians and astrologers that were in all his realm. And Daniel continued even unto the first year of King Cyrus.

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

How often we hear the expression that a certain man is as "strong as a Turk!" And those who have seen a Turkish porter fling a heavy trunk unaided upon his shoulders will do well to remember that these men rarely taste flesh food in any form whatever....

George Allen, the man who walked a thousand miles across England and Scotland in seventeen days and a few hours, out-distancing his flesh-eating rival by nearly seven days, was a strict vegetarian....

General Booth, now eighty years of age, still directs the great work of the Salvation Army, lectures to immense audiences, does enough work every day to tire two or three ordinary men, and he attributes his endurance largely to his simple habits of life and to a non-flesh dietary.... and it is by no means a mere figure of speech to say that there is more beefsteak in every pound of either beans, peas, lentils, or ordinary nuts, than there is in a pound of butcher's meat.

Digitized by Google

The indisputable conclusions from all these facts are gradually percolating down into the workingmen's strata and many of them are today investing in literature and the conveniences of life the money that they formerly paid for meat.

DAVID PAULSEN, M.D., the late Founder and for eleven years Medical Superintendent of the Hinsdale Sanitarium; Popular Chautauqua and Health Lecturer; For Years President of the National Anti-Cigarette League; Editor of *The Life Boat.* "Can Working Men Live Comfortably Without Meat for Sixty Days?" * *The Life Boat,* March, 1910, pp. 66, 67.

There has been developed in modern times an extensive mania for concentrated, artificial sweets, and we are paying a dear price for it....

The candy habit is generally acquired in early childhood. On this subject, Dr. Deeks uses the following strong language:

"In the attractive manner sugars are now manufactured and sold in the form of sweets and candies to stimulate their consumption, they have crept into every man's home. I firmly believe they are the greatest curse in modern civilization....

"The candy shops with wide-open doors to children of all ages where their gift pennies are spent, are a veritable curse to the land, poisoning the youth of the country and undermining their physical and mental development."....

The thirty pounds of candy that is eaten every year in this country for every man, woman, and child in the land is seed sown for a bountiful harvest. On this subject, Dr. Byford says, "It is certain that pie, cake, rich pudding, imperfectly cooked bakery, sweets, are prime factors in producing such diseases as gallstones, diabetes, inflammation and ulcer of the stomach and bowels.....

There is a sane, moderate use of sweets which probably does no harm to the healthy individual. It is the candy craze, the disposition to absolutely cover a dish of wholesome cereal with sugar when in the process of digestion it is itself changed into natural sugar....

On this point Packard writes: "If you have chronic catarrh the probabilities are that you are a sugar fiend. Use fruits and pure water to cleanse the system. Resort particularly to apples. If you crave sugar, eat seedless raisins, figs, dates, malt sugar or honey. You will readily discover the fact that a very little natural sugar will thoroughly satisfy sugar craving whereas the artificial sugar of commerce never satisfies."

DAVID PAULSEN, M.D., "The Curse of Unnecessary Sweets," *The Life Boat,* November, 1913, pp. 321-323.*

In the wealthiest portions of London, one out of seven grown-up people die of cancer, while in the poorer district the average is only one in fifty-four....

* Written for the Chicago *Sunday Tribune,* Feb. 20, 1910. Republished in *The Life Boat* by permission.

* Dr. Deeks was, when above article was written, "pellagra specialist at the government hospital in the Panama Canal Zone."

Digitized by Google

I quote the following well-known fact from Russell's book, "Preventable Cancer":

"The Russian Doukhobors had existed as a community about a century.... About 7,000 of them emigrated to Canada when expelled from Russia.

The Canadian papers describe them as a fine-looking set, with stalwart frames. The children look the perfect picture of health. An old man of eighty-five was as happy and active as a boy. Disease, according to Mr. Blow, was rarely known among them. They are particularly clean, frugal and moral. They have keen minds, are kind to animals, and ready to help in any work. I have just heard from the manager that he has *never known of any cancer among them.*

The Doukhobors in Canada refrain from fish, flesh, or fowl, as food, and live on fruit, vegetables, and nuts. Cows are kept for milk. No tea or coffee is drunk. Wholesome bread, jam, honey, and vegetable butter from sunflower seeds are eaten regularly. The houses are roomy, airy and clean; the people wash frequently in baths and are scrupulously clean, regular, and orderly."

DAVID PAULSEN, M.D., *Life Boat,* April, 1914.

We have been a gormandizing people in the use of wines and meats, the abundant use of sweets and many unnecessary and harmful articles....

It will be cheaper, cleaner and better for us healthwise to substitute our meats with such foods as cottage cheese, soy beans, navy beans, peas, lentils, nuts, macaroni and cheese, and other similar foods.

Quoting from the new War Cook Book issued by the United States food administration, we read the following:... Cottage cheese, the curd of sour milk, is one of the most important meat substitutes. It supplies more protein per pound than most meats and is considerably cheaper....

Substitute vegetable fats for butter and animal fats.

MARY W. PAULSEN, M.D., Medical Superintendent Hinsdale Sanitarium, "Kitchen Patriotism," *The Life Boat,* May, 1918.

Outdoor sleeping is the best life-preserver known....

Find your bill-of-fare largely in the garden—peaches, apples, luscious grapes, plums, and pears, lettuce, green corn, celery, potatoes, greens, tomatoes, melons, nuts, and all the rest of the luxuries which Mother Earth supplies. Revel in salads and berries, and green stuffs untouched by fire. These dainty foods abound in vitamines, and vitamines are the real elixir of life discovered at last in this twentieth century.... No animals but scavengers and men eat everything....

Avoid meats of all sorts (flesh, fowl, fish, including "sea food"). .... They are all likely to contain deadly parasites of various kinds, and always contain countless numbers of noxious germs, "meat bacteria" or "wild germs," which infect the intestines, cause putrefaction and other poison-forming processes, and inoculate the body with

Digitized by Google

colitis and many other diseases. These germs are not destroyed by ordinary cooking, such as stewing, boiling, frying, and roasting....

Discard tobacco, alcoholic beverages, "tonic drugs" and other nerve foolers. They are poisons which lessen efficiency and shorten life.

J. H. Kellogg, M.D., Superintendent Battle Creek Sanitarium, *The Simple Life in a Nutshell.*

In regard to the question pertaining to the Hebrew captives I would say, it would be difficult to find a more forceful argument favoring a meatless and sweetless diet than that furnished in the book of Daniel. It for all time settles the disputed point as to whether it is possible to subsist on a diet made up of grains, fruit and nuts and legumes.

Physically these young men were superior to their associates who ate at the king's table. Mentally and intellectually they excelled them all. Morally and spiritually they were their superiors by far. It seems that in this experience, and its record on the divine page, God would forever silence the objector to a meatless diet. Last year $4,500,000,000 was paid out for food in the U. S. Of this sum over one third, or $1,800,000,000 was expended for meats. Mr. Hoover's appeal to eat less meat will, if responded to, increase the health of our people. One hundred years ago seven lbs. of sugar were consumed annually per capita in the United States. Last year this amounted to twelve times that amount or 84 lbs. To cut down the sugar supply is a blessing in disguise.

The free use of meats and sugars is responsible for the prevalence of intestinal catarrh and of appendicitis.

In countries where meat is seldom used and free sugar is never served on the table, appendicitis is practically unknown.

D. H. Kress, M.D., Author, Traveler, Lecturer; Formerly physician in Battle Creek Sanitarium; First Medical Superintendent and Manager of the Washington Medical and Surgical Sanitarium, Washington, D.C.; Pioneer in Sanitarium Work in England and Australia.

Meat eating among the American people is almost universal. I am often asked, "How can you keep strong without meat?"

I sometimes remind the questioner that the race horse gets along pretty well without steak or wiener-wurst.... In consuming flesh foods, you only get the plants and vegetables second hand, after they have been through the body of an animal that knows nor observes no law of cleanliness or hygiene.

Harry B. Weinburgh, *Perfect Health*, pp. 131, 132.

In answer to your query regarding the restrictions laid on us by Mr. Hoover, my opinion is that they are a decided benefit in every way, as was demonstrated by Daniel and his companions in the court of Babylon. A simple diet is of decided advantage, for physical and mental vigor. For the grains and legumes in their natural state contain all the sixteen elements necessary to body growth and repair, while the vegetables and fruits act as appetizers, blood purifiers and

Digitized by Google

body regulators. Alcohol, sugar, and meat contain only a part of the necessary food elements in a *too* concentrated form.

Dr. Osler in his etiology of diseases puts alcohol as one of the most common causes of disease. Dr. Gould speaks of sugar as one of the seven deadly sins of modern civilization and his statement is verified by the sugar biscuit children of Chicago.

Sugar is the best friend that tuberculosis has, for after the body has imprisoned the germs within a stone wall sugar dissolves the calcium and sets the prisoners free.

Calcium is supplied in sufficient quantities in the outer colored coats of all grains, in green garden vegetables, milk, etc. It is neutralized by sugar.

The teeth are often rendered soft and subject to decay for lack of the hardening influence of calcium which is neutralized by candy, sugar, and sweet meats.

Dr. Turk speaks of cancer as the meat eater's disease, and to cancer we may add Bright's disease, rheumatism, auto-intoxication, arteriosclerosis, heart trouble, etc.

Now what was true of the Hebrew worthies is true today of every one who has the moral courage to discard all health destroying luxuries and live on simple natural foods and clear pure water. A ten days trial will demonstrate the utility of the simple diet.

L. H. Wolfsen, M.D., Boulder Colorado Sanitarium.

The physical tests carefully carried out by Dr. Fisher, of Yale University, showed that the sanitarium staff of vegetarians, compared with athletes from Yale fed on meat, were many times superior on an average in feats of endurance.

Wilfred Grenfell, M.D., *The Soul of Battle Creek*, p. 13.

Moses led the children of Israel out of Egypt, the Egyptians built the Pyramids, Homer wrote the Iliad and the Odyssey, the Caesars conquered the world of their times, Dante sang of Beatrice, Joan of Arc saved France, the Tudors snatched England from the power of the pope, Columbus discovered America, all on a diet entirely minus sugar as a food ingredient. Honey they knew, but not the sweet juice of the cane, and honey was a delicacy only for the occasional use of the rich.

The opening up of the West Indies introduced sugar to the slowly awakening world. So, when we are reduced, as we are today, to a monthly allowance of three pounds of sugar per capita let us think of all that was accomplished by men and women who never knew sugar.

Mme. X. in *Chicago Tribune*.

In the second place, diabetes is a good deal of a national menace, and candy eating provokes diabetes.

In the third place, candy eating is hard on the digestion.

In the fourth place, candy is an expensive food.

Sugar disease and diabetes are one and the same.

Dr. W. A. Evans, Editor, How to Keep Well Department, *Chicago Tribune*.

Digitized by Google

Showing that, biologically, man is not a carnivorous animal, Cuvier, the great naturalist, says that the natural food of man, judging from his structure, appears to consist of fruits, roots, and the succulent parts of vegetables. And this is corroborated by the Scripture (Gen. 1:28) that originally man's diet was fruit, grains, and nuts.

Meat-eating shortens life by introducing toxins and poisons. Over-loading the system with protein in any form is a frequent cause of disease, but that the protein of meat brings added burdens to the eliminative organs is the testimony of Doctor Bishop, recognized authority on arteriosclerosis,—premature old age,—who says, "Vegetable protein foods are free from toxins with which flesh foods abound." Doctor Bishop insists that a diet free from animal proteins is the most essential part of his treatment for hardening of the blood vessels.

Meat-eating is an active cause of tuberculosis and cancer. "People are continually eating flesh that is filled with tuberculosis and cancerous germs. Tuberculosis, cancer, and other fatal diseases are thus communicated."

The American Medical Journal is authority for the statement that, in view of the diseased condition of animals, practically all meat on the market contains more or less disease.

Bulkley, an authority on cancer, boldly announces that flesh foods are the most important cause of cancer, and his treatment consists "in an absolutely vegetarian diet."....

A flesh diet is stimulating, and creates an appetite for condiments, tobacco and strong drink.

A meat diet is anything but economical. That it requires over thirty pounds of corn to produce one pound of beefsteak, has been determined by Professor Henry of the University of Wisconsin.

E. A. Sutherland, M.D., President, Nashville Agricultural and Normal Institute, and Medical Superintendent of the Madison Rural Sanitarium, in *The Madison Survey.*

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVII.

ISAIAH, THE PROPHET OF NAZARETH—AND A WORLD IN NEED.

100. Is America called to be the Good Samaritan to the World?

BIBLE EVIDENCE.

Isaiah 58:6, 7, 9—Is not this the fast that I have chosen? To loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke?

Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer;....

Luke 10:29, 30, 33, 37—But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbor?

And Jesus answering said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves,....

But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him,

....Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

Leviticus 19:34—But the stranger that dwelleth with you shall be unto you as one born among you, and thou shalt love him as thyself;....

Acts 17:24, 26—God that made the world and all things therein,.... And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth,....

SECULAR EVIDENCE.

"Not what we give, but what we share,
For the gift without the giver is bare;"

JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL, "The Vision of Sir Launfal."

That man's the best Cosmopolite
Who loves his native country best.

TENNYSON.

"He loves his native counry best
Who loves mankind the most."

The world must be made safe for democracy.

WOODROW WILSON, Message to Congress, April 2, 1917.

America,—half-brother of the world!—

BAILEY, Found in *Forty Thousand Quotations Prose and Poetical,* Compiled by Charles N. Douglas, p. 67.

Digitized by Google

It is ours to be either the grave in which the hopes of the world are to be entombed or the pillar of cloud that shall pilot the race to its millennial glory. Let us not forget our immortal trust.

ALEXANDER HAMILTON.

Observe good faith and justice among all nations; cultivate peace and harmony with all.

WASHINGTON.

None but the shipwrecked and the immigrants, these wayfarers who come to save and be saved, know the joy of that note which goes from lip to lip as it echoes and reechoes in thirty languages, yet with the one word of throbbing joy,—land—land—America.

EDWARD A. STEINER, *The Trail of the Immigrant.*

Our country is the world—our countrymen are all mankind.

WILLIAM LLOYD GARRISON.

America is only another name for opportunity.

EMERSON.

We, sir, are Americans—and we stand for human liberty.

HENRY W. GRADY.

The star-flowering banner must never be furled,
For its blossoms of light are the hope of the world.

OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES.

But we are true Americans at heart, and we know beyond all doubt or contradiction ours is GOD'S COUNTRY.

FRANCES E. WILLARD.

The stars upon it were to the pining nations like the bright morning stars of God, and the stripes upon it were beams of morning light.

HENRY WARD BEECHER.

To fictionists of all sorts there may be Orient and Occident; to the scholar and the practical man the world is one, and "above all nations is humanity."

WM. ELLIOT GRIFFIS, "Japan in the World War," in *The North American Review,* November, 1918.

Is America Called to be the Good Samaritan to the World?

"For none of us liveth to himself." And what is true of individuals is also true of nations. Whatever may have been in the past, it is certain now that no nation can longer live to itself.

The recent war has demonstrated the fact that the same code of ethics which binds the man in his relation to other and weaker men, must bind the nation in its relation to other and weaker nations.

Selfishness, whether in the individual, the family, the church or the state, is always mean and sinful. Might never makes right, whether backed by a pair of big fists or a Kaiser's army and navy.

"I will bless thee and thou shalt be a blessing," was God's pro-

Digitized by Google

gram for the individual life in the ancient time. It is his program for the nation's life in this modern time.

Europe has fallen among crowned thieves. She has been robbed, stripped of her raiment and wounded; and while the robbers are now departed they have left her bleeding and half dead.

America has never been this way before, but here we are in contact with this awful catastrophe, and we cannot if we would, like the Priest and Levite of the parable, pass by or stay on the other side.

We have seen the tragedy. Our hearts have been stirred with compassion, and now with our oil and wine we must bind up the wounds, supply our food for the famishing, and above all whisper the sweet Gospel of our evangelical faith to the poor stricken ones who have only a religion of form and ceremony. In short we must bring to them in place of the dead Christ of the crucifix the living Christ who abides in the hearts of His people.

Yes, verily no nation ever had such a call before. America will either forfeit her birthright or prove herself the Good Samaritan to the stricken and sorrowing world.

REV. JESSE W. BROOKS, Ph.D., Chairman First General Conference for the Evangelization of Russia; Secretary and Superintendent, Chicago Tract Society; Ex-President, Union Missionary Training Institute, New York City.

America is the hope of the world today.

FRANK A. VANDERLIP, President of the National City Bank, New York City, May 20, 1919.

"HOW AMERICA CAN SAVE EUROPE," *VANDERLIP'S TOPIC.*

• • •

For five months Frank A. Vanderlip, one of America's foremost international financiers, has been studying conditions in Europe. The results of his investigations have aroused America. "I have reached," he declares, "some startling conclusions. America must understand how her own future is bound up in the fate of European civilization. Without America's help—not America's charity—the catastrophe cannot be averted." Mr. Vanderlip talked with practically every premier, finance minister, big business man, labor leader and important employer in allied Europe. He found that Europe faces economic collapse. "But this tragedy may be averted if America is wise enough —for America is the last hope of Europe," he says....

The Chicago Daily News, July 29, 1919.

The appeal which was issued to the public in 1875 by the promoters and organizers of the French-American Union was expressed as follows:

"America is soon to celebrate the hundreth anniversary of her independence. That date marks an epoch in the history of humanity: to the New World, it recalls her work, the foundation of the great Republic; to France, one of the most honorable pages in her history....

Digitized by Google

The great event which is to be celebrated on the Fourth of July, 1876, allows us to celebrate with our American brothers the old and strong friendship which for a long time has united the two peoples.

The New World is preparing to give extraordinary splendor to that festival; friends of the United States have thought that the genius of France ought to display itself in a dazzling form. A French artist has embodied that thought in a plan worthy of its object, and which is approved by all; he has come to an understanding with our friends in America and has prepared all the means for executing the plan. It is proposed to erect, as a memorial of the glorious anniversary, an exceptional monument. In the midst of the harbor of New York, upon an island which belongs to the Union of the States, in front of Long Island, where was poured out the first blood for independence, a colossal statue would rear its head, outlined upon space, framed on the horizon by the great American cities of New York, Jersey City and Brooklyn. At the threshold of that vast continent, full of a new life, where arrive all the vessels of the world, the statue will rise upon the bosom of the waves. It will represent "Liberty Enlightening the World." At night a resplendent aureole upon its brow will throw its beams far upon the vast sea.

That movement will be executed in common by the two peoples, associated in this fraternal work as they were of old in founding independence. We will make a gift of the statue to our friends in America; they will unite with us in meeting the expenses of the execution and of the erection of the monument which will serve as a pedestal.... Let us each bring his mite. The smallest subscriptions will be heartily welcomed. Let the number of signers testify to the sentiments of France."

The principal signers to that appeal were: Messieurs Laboulaye, De Noailles,.... De Tocqueville, O. de Lafayette,....

FREDERICK AUGUSTE BARTHOLDI, Sculptor, *Liberty Enlightening the World*, pp. 53-54.

The statue was born for this place which inspired its conception. May God be pleased to bless my efforts and my work, and to crown it with the success, duration and the moral influence which it ought to have. I shall be happy to have been able to consecrate the best years of my life to being the interpreter of the noble hearts whose dream has been the realization of the monument to the French-American Union.

FREDERICK AUGUSTE BARTHOLDI, Sculptor of the Statue of Liberty Enlightening the World,* *Liberty Enlightening the World*, p. 52.

Of the various races that have contributed to the development of the United States there is one whose part is as yet wholly unrecognized.... We remember—or do we not rather forget?—that when the white men came in their winged canoe across "the Sea of big Stormes" to the bleak shore of the "Dawn Land," Chief Samoset

* It is the loftiest statue in the world.—*The International Encyclopaedia*, Vol. XIV, p. 57.

Digitized by Google

LIBERTY ENLIGHTENING THE WORLD

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

met them with outstretched hand and the "Welcome, Englishmen," which he had learned from the fisher folk with whom he had traded on the Newfoundland banks. We quite forget that during that first cruel winter of 1620-21 it was the food and the furs brought them by the Indians that saved our fore-fathers from bitter death by cold and hunger; that Squanto came in the spring and taught them how to grow the unfamiliar corn, and that Samoset was their protector as well as their interpreter as they threaded the Indian-haunted forests. We forget that even earlier than this our Virginia ancestors had for several years been saved from starvation by the maize, pumpkins and succotash,...with which the Powhatans generously provided them....

The undesirable qualities which we constantly ascribe to Indians no more necessarily characterize them than at the present day they characterize the full-blooded Sioux O-hi-ye-a, whom we better know as Dr. Charles A. Eastman, lately Agency Surgeon for the Government,.... whose writings and whose life have done much to remove the stigma which unjustly rests upon the Indian; or the Apache Dr. Carlos Montezuma, for long years Government physician on various Reservations, and later Professor in the College of Physicians and Surgeons and in the Post-Graduate Medical School,....

The Government of this country is now evidently awake to the importance and the duty of a new, unselfish and consistent policy with regard to the Indian. A thorough revision of the entire body of laws dealing with this race is a part of the duty of the present Congress....

A French Indian, Mr. Red Fox James, who recently organized at Carlyle the first Indian troop of Boy Scouts in the world, about that time rode 3,784 miles on his Indian pony, carrying to President Wilson a message from the Governor of Montana, endorsed by the Governors of twenty-four states and by a vast number of other influential men, with the petition that "Indian Day," advocated by Mr. A. C. Parker and accepted by the Society of American Indians, be made a National holiday in honor of the North American Indians.

No doubt the most prophetic day in the Indian history of the twentieth century was Columbus Day, 1911, which saw the founding of the Society of American Indians....

But the brightest of all the days it has as yet seen was December 10, 1914, when President Wilson received a group of delegates of that Society. That day, as Mr. A. C. Parker wrote in the Quarterly Journal, marked a new beginning in Indian progress. "Never before perhaps had there assembled so large a body of men and women of Indian blood, having so wide an influence in the world's affairs." The memorial then presented had been formulated by a committee of Indians of distinction, in the office of the then Registrar of the Treasury, the Hon. Gabe Parker, a French-Choctaw and a member of the advisory board of the Society. Mr. A. C. Parker, then Secretary-Treasurer, now President of the Society, introduced to the President the forty delegates present, Senator Owen (Cherokee) being with him. The Memorial asked, first, that measures be taken to define the status of the Indians by Federal authority, and second, that the Court

Digitized by Google

of Claims be given jurisdiction over all Indian claims against the United States. It further made request that just opportunities be afforded to insure the efficiency and enlarge the capacity of those who have not now the freedom to struggle upward. Every lover of this country should stand with the Society of American Indians in pressing the requests of this Memorial which still, in 1918, are ungratified.

"How has he (the Indian) contributed to the world's progress?" asks Dr. Charles A. Eastman in the Quarterly Journal of the Society of American Indians for January, 1915. "By his personal faithfulness to duty and devotion to the pledged word.... By his constancy in the face of hardship and death.... This simplicity and fairness have cost him dear,.... even to the extinction of his race as a separate and peculiar people, but as a type, an ideal, he lives and will live."

"Look back in history," writes the Apache, Dr. Carlos Montezuma, "and find if you can, any race that ever inhabited this earth who had contended against a greater force than ours for a period of four hundred years.... God only knows the trials, tribulations, slavery and oppressions to which the Indian race has been obliged to submit, and yet is valiantly fighting to overcome."

Yes, let us as a nation look back—that we may go forward to a far greater achievement than we wrought when through blood and tears we freed the blacks; and peacefully, hopefully, joining hands with those men and women of mixed-blood who bring us "next" to it, apply our own best powers to wipe the dark blot from our scutcheon, by enabling the noble Indian race to realize its "best."

LOUISE SEYMOUR HOUGHTON, *Our Debt to the Red Man,* with an Introduction by The Hon. Francis E. Leupp, Formerly Indian Commissioner, pp. 1, 23, 202-204, 209, 210. 1918.

NOTE—Arthur C. Parker, State Archaeologist of New York, President of the Society of the American Indians, Editor of *The American Indian,* etc. 1918.

Whether they shall become upright, self-supporting, intelligent American citizens, depends upon our attitude rather than upon them.

WARREN K. MOOREHEAD, A.M., Author, "The Stone Age in North America," Curator of the Department of American Archaeology, Phillips Academy, Andover, Mass.; Member of the United States Board of Indian Commissions; Fellow, American Association for the Advancement of Science, etc. *The American Indian in the United States,* Introduction, 1914.

America knows least of what is most American. Melting-pot of the nations, with Europe's and Asia's dross thrown in along with their good metal, she is likely to forget, in all this conglomerate, the base of the alloy, which made the nation and which must yet preserve it. In the providence of God there has been saved to America a long wedge of that pure metal—a golden wedge of Ophir. Stretching from North to South, scarce two hundred miles inland, are the mountains that formed the frontier of English America when America became a nation....

A smattering of knowledge—gained mostly from works of fiction—has the American public of this great mountaineer race, a smatter-

Digitized by Google

ing that begets more of idle wonder and vacant amusement than of honest admiration and sympathy. Yet the Southern mountaineer is, all in all, the most admirable type of American. Schooled to simplicity, not lacking in vigor, he keeps in great degree the powers that preserve nations, powers that too many of our people are losing in the nerve-racking strain of our unexampled age. What of opportunity and resource the mountaineer lacks it is the duty of more fortunate classes to supply. It is a duty of patriotism, and above all a duty of Christian brotherhood.

ARTHUR W. SPAULDING, Editor *The Watchman*—Preface, *Men of the Mountains*. 1915.

Nobody knows whar dis poverty all comes—
How many po' folk am sleepin' in de slums.
Nobody knows jes' how few am befriendin',
But de good Lo'd knows dar mus' soon be an endin'.
Nobody sees, but de Lo'd done see 'em,
An' bime-by de Lo'd 'll tell humanity ter free 'em.

BEN KING, *Ben King's Verse*, p. 80.

First Shepherd:

I think that when the King of Love is grown,
And hearts of men are loving like his own,
He who has gold will with his brother share;
There will be bread and wine and fire to spare;
For who can love, yet sit and feast alone?

SOPHIE JEWETT, "The Shepherds," in *Christ in the Poetry of Today*, Compiled by Martha Foote Crowe.

Some one has said that 'it is a fine thing to be neighborly, but a finer thing to mind one's own business.' We would paraphrase this by saying it is a fine thing to be neighborly and a finer thing to include the world in our neighborhood. We are here reminded of the words of Jehovah to that first murderer in criminal history, Cain, 'where is thy brother?' And the answer of the guilty man was: 'Am I my brother's keeper?' In his answer Jehovah makes it clear that Cain was his brother's keeper by declaring, 'The voice of thy brother's blood crieth unto me from the ground.' As this principle holds good with individuals so it is with nations. We are our brother's keeper as nations. This is the teaching of our first text. Therefore the world is truly our neighborhood, and as Christ so graphically taught in the parable of the Good Samaritan all who are in need are our neighbors. Our responsibility to them in each case is to be measured by our ability to help them. The United States, because of its wealth, both material and spiritual, is debtor to all the weak nations of earth, and is called upon by the present situation to be the Good Samaritan to the nations.

EVANGELIST MILTON H. ST. JOHN, Advertisement, *The Chicago Daily News*, March 3, 1919.

God's message to this nation has been thus interpreted: "Here are all these people; I have taken them from the overcrowded coun-

Digitized by Google

tries where they were living and sent them to you, that you may mass your forces and lend a hand to save them."

HOWARD B. GROSE, *Aliens or Americans?* p. 269.

Above all nations is Humanity.

Cosmopolitan Club Motto.

America is the land of the larger hope.

LADY HENRY SOMERSET.

It pleased Heaven to open this last refuge of Humanity.

EDWARD EVERETT.

Our country has suddenly been shaken out of its complacency. It has come to take its place among the world powers and has come to understand that no nation liveth to itself as 'no man liveth to himself,' and we as Americans must come to understand that in any righteous league that shall bind the nations together we must give as well as take.

MRS. GEORGE THATCHER GUERNSEY, President-General of the Daughters of the American Revolution. April 14, 1919, in address before the 28th Annual Continental Congress of the Daughters of the American Revolution.

Let us realize that this country, the last founded, is the greatest charity of God to the human race.

EMERSON.

In America is the hope of mankind—....

BARONESS VON SUTTNER.

".... Never forget the poor, nor think anything you bestow on them to be lost to you, even though they may be black as Ebedmelech, the Ethiopian eunuch, who cared for Jeremiah in the pit of the dungeon; or as black as the one to whom Philip preached Christ.... Remember them that are in bonds as bound with them."

JOHN BROWN, in "Letters to His Family," 1859—quoted in *John Brown*, by W. E. Burghardt DuBois, Ph. D., Former Professor of Sociology, Atlanta University.

Actively we have woven ourselves with the very warp and woof of this nation,—we fought their battles, shared their sorrow, mingled our blood with theirs, and generation after generation have pleaded with a headstrong, careless people to despise not Justice, Mercy, and Truth, lest the nation be smitten with a curse. Our song, our toil, our cheer, and warning have been given to this nation in blood-brotherhood. Are not these gifts worth the giving? Is not this work and striving? Would America have been America without her Negro people?

W. E. BURGHARDT DUBOIS, Editor of *The Crisis*. Author of "The Suppression of the African Slave Trade," "The Philadelphia Negro," etc. *The Souls of Black Folk*, p. 263.

No other race, or white or black,
When bound as thou wert, to the rack,

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

COLONEL JOHN SOBIESKI
American Patriot—For Long Years "Heir to the Throne of Poland"

Digitized by Google

So seldom stooped to grieving;
No other race, when free again,
Forgot the past and proved them men
So noble in forgiving.

Go on and up! our souls and eyes
Shall follow thy continuous rise;
Our ears shall list thy story
From bards who from thy root shall spring,
And proudly tune their lyres to sing
Of Ethiopia's glory.

PAUL LAWRENCE DUNBAR, "Ode to Ethiopia," *The Life and Work of Paul Lawrence Dunbar*, p. 145.

WHY ALL WHO BELIEVE IN WORLD-WIDE DEMOCRACY SHOULD SYMPATHIZE WITH POLAND.

First,—Because it was the first nation to adopt Democracy. In 1572, when the republic was founded, they adopted a written constitution, and under that constitution the office of king was made elective. While having the title, the king of Poland had none of the powers of a king, and could be removed any day by a vote of the Diet, without impeachment or trial. The governing body was composed of two chambers called the Diet—both bodies elective.

Second,—Because it was the first nation to declare for religious liberty. Under the wording of the Constitution, they declared that no citizen should be deprived of his right to worship God as he saw fit and proper. Jew or Gentile, Catholic or Protestant, Mohammedan or Infidel had equal rights, and no one suffered either in person or in property on account of his religious convictions.

Third,—Poland stood for peace. They declared in their constitution that the arms of the Republic of Poland should never be engaged except in defense of the Republic against invasion, and in defense of Christendom when assailed by the powers of Mohammed. In the two hundred years of its existence as a republic these principles of the Constitution were never disregarded. Hence, Poland, three hundred years ago was the pioneer nation in all that the best thought of the world of today stands for, to-wit: Democracy, Religious Liberty and Peace.

JOHN SOBIESKI, May, 1919.

For two hundred years Poland stood like a wall of fire, protecting the Christian world against the fierce and fanatical Turks—never asking or receiving any compensation whatsoever for all of this sacrifice to save the nations. And Poland stood in the fight until the last mighty attempt that the Mohammedans made to conquer the Christian world, when with an army of half a million they marched triumphantly to the walls of Vienna. The whole Christian world was in dismay. It was there that Poland's great King John the Third, with his Christian army of seventy thousand met them and dealt them such a crushing blow that it ended forever any further attempts to conquer the Christian world....

Digitized by Google

The day of retribution has come and Russia, Prussia and Austria are in the dust.... So those three great and powerful empires dying, covered with shame and humiliation, while Poland, which they robbed and ruled for more than one hundred years, is again restored and is taking her place proudly among the free, independent and glorious republics.

But Poland has a great problem before her. Probably in the world's history never has a nation had a more difficult one. More than half of the country has been utterly devastated. More than twenty thousand towns and villages have been burned. More than two-thirds of her man power has either been killed or disabled. Her wealth has been largely dissipated and practically all of her resources destroyed.

JOHN SOBIESKI,* "The Republic of Poland," in *The Golden West Magazine*, April, 1919.

"To THE mountains, in time to come, we may look for great men, thinkers as well as workers, leaders of religious and poetic thought, and statesmen above all."

EMMA B. MILES.

"THE young man of the mountain, when once educated, is so confident of himself, and so positive of opinion, that he is admirably adapted to be a leader."

SAMUEL T. WILSON.

• • •

"The temple of knowledge is not to be found by searching through far lands; it stands here at our hand. Nor are the great men and the leaders to come mysteriously from some distant place; they are here at our doors, pleading for a chance."

MARTHA BERRY.

• • •

"HERE is our Jerusalem, the children of the hills; our neighbors; our kith and kin. Begin with them and save them and let them help us save the world."

EDWARD O. GUERRANT.

Quoted by Arthur W. Spaulding in *Men of the Mountains*, pp. 10, 176, 278, 296.

How is it with Japan? Just now it is fashionable in certain quarters to suspect Japan's friendship for the United States. Yet those who are in a position to know the facts, and especially those who understand the Japanese people, maintain that Japan's attitude and

* "Now, just one more question, Colonel Sobieski: Have you any desire to return to Poland and claim your title and estate?" With an emphatic gesture he replied: "No, indeed, I sincerely hope that my native land may become a free and prosperous republic, but I have no wish to return there. The United States is good enough for me and the only title I desire is that of an American Citizen!"

CARRIE LEE CARTER-STOKES, reporting an interview with John Sobieski, in an article published in *The Golden West Magazine*, Los Angeles, April 1, 1919.

Digitized by Google

admiration for America is no less today than when she was seeking our help in the matter of readjusting her life to Western standards and ways..... As for the people of Japan, in distinction from their Government, it is reassuring to find that they do not propose to be outdone by the Chinese in their admiration for statesmen like Washington and Lincoln..... A missionary from Japan cites the case of a primary school which voted almost solidly to have Lincoln's picture hung on its walls as its favorite hero.

Dr. Gulick writes to the same effect, "A few years ago," he says, "inquiry was made in Japan as to the effect on Japanese students of their life in the various lands. The opinion of educators was unanimous that those who studied in Europe returned to Japan confirmed in their patriotism and highly critical of other lands, while those who had studied in America were highly critical of Japan and laudatory of America. So pronounced was this difference that narrow-minded Japanese dissuade students from going to America lest they lose their Japanese patriotism."

Dr. Danjo Ebina, the scholarly preacher of Tokio, recently addressed a deputation of American Christians in these words: "After the War, Japan must act upon the world stage;.... We Christians must act together with the United States of America, politically and spiritually. We need the help of the Americans to make our people come to the world consciousness."

CORNELIUS H. PATTON, D.D., Secretary, Home Department, American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, Author of "The Lure of Africa." *World Facts and America's Responsibility*, pp. 95-98.

Will you listen to the cry of Russia?
Will you hearken as her children weep?
They are hungry, but the fields are barren,
They are thirsty and the well is deep.

• • •

They are waiting, Russia's millions waiting,
Only few are freed by Christ as yet.
Who will go, and who will help the going?
Hasten then, before the sun is set!

WILLIAM FETLER, "The Cry of Russia," in *Good News for Russia*, p. 253.

I wish to tell you what I received during October from America, that great and benevolent country that fills my existence with surprises, caresses and endowments of all kinds.... But the goodness of my American friends grows greater and greater, and I am afraid I shall be spoiled.... It makes me very happy to see such a majestic commonwealth as the American States awakening to a more righteous and ethical life. This effort will stir the energy of other countries, not so quick to attain the end put before them.

MADAME BRESHKOVSKY — real name Ekatarina Constantinovna Breshko-Breshkovskaya—Grandmother of the Russian revolution.
The Little Grandmother of the Russian Revolution—*Reminiscences and Letters of Catharine Breshkovsky*, Edited by Alice Stone Blackwell, pp. 206, 211, 256.—1917.

Digitized by Google

Dr. Edward A. Steiner, who knows more about the human side of the immigrant than any other man in America, recently declared that 5,000 strong-limbed, healthy-bodied immigrants landing on Ellis Island are more resourceful than as many average college graduates would be—and Dr. Steiner knows, for he is a college professor.

• • •

We are often concerned about what we term the "new immigration," but Robert Watchhorn, for several years commissioner at Ellis Island, once remarked, "If you give the Italian, the Hungarian and the Russian Jew half a chance he will make the English, the Irish and the German look like thirty cents," and presumably Mr. Watchhorn knew what he was talking about, for he has handled literally millions of immigrants.

The prizes in the public schools of our large cities are being taken by the children of the immigrant. The brightest scholars in the public schools on the East Side of New York are the children of Russian refugees....

What has here been said refers of course to the people coming from European countries. What may be the case with regard to the Oriental immigration which is rapidly confronting us in America is another question. But it is said by those who have lived in Asia that the possibilities of these races are just as great as are those among Europeans.

CHARLES STELZLE, *American Social and Religious Conditions*, pp. 104, 106. 1912.

This is the first reason for making my appeal to the American people. And if you ask me who it is that has authorized me to make it, I answer that it is my seventy-five years of life among my people, who have confidence in me, and my fifty years of struggle for the freedom, the honor and the welfare of my Motherland.... And proud of that love, proud of the confidence of my people, I appeal to you, citizens of America, and remind you that there, far away, lives a true and honest democracy ready to pursue her way side by side with you, if you desire it.

Do you ask me why I especially address my woes and sorrows to you? It is because we, Russians, regard you as a people that have always cherished their liberty, that have always held high the standards of Democracy, that have never stood for despotism and oppression. And also, because many times have we heard from you words of friendship, words that give us Russians the hope to see in you faithful brothers, always ready to aid us in the hour of our hardships.

This hour has come. And I, the old nurse of my beloved, suffering child, I come to tell you, friends, about our sufferings. Great are these sufferings, and undeserved. It would be a great sin to leave Russia alone, her bleeding wounds unattended.... My friends, he who has much must give much. From the very beginning of the history of this country we see her people possessed of a high degree of culture and spiritual enlightenment;... We see in the people of this

Digitized by Google

country the eldest brethren of the Russian people, and we hope they will stretch forth their hands to us without pride, unselfishly, bringing moral and material aid.

* * *

Flooded with tears and blood, Russia moans and cries out to the world. She is a living body, and her tortures cannot be looked upon cold-bloodedly as an extraordinary, never-before-witnessed experiment in social evolution. She is alive, and every pore of her body is shedding blood.

* * *

Leaving Russia, I told the peasants that I was going to America to present to the Americans the present situation in Russia. Their reply was a unanimous outcry: "Go, and ask them to help us in our misfortunes. We cannot help ourselves."

Indeed, it is hard for the Russian people to overcome their difficulties unassisted.... Trusting in human willingness to help one another, they are ready to ask the democratic nations, and especially the Americans, to help them.

CATHERINE BRESHKOVSKY, "The Grandmother of the Russian Revolution," *A Message to the American People,* Introduction by George Kennan. 1919.

The question now before this conference is, What ought a people like the American people to do for a people like the Russian people?.... Most of us have never suffered for our faith very much. Here we are, a great nation of 110 million people,.... with absolute religious liberty for every man to speak and sing and pray and come and go as he pleases. What do we owe to two hundred million people who have been under the wheel, in terror of their lives,—what do we owe to these people at the present time? Now you all know that there is in progress a movement to send the printed Word to Russia much more largely than ever before;.... What does a nation like ours, in circumstances such as ours, owe to a nation like Russia, a nation where the Gospel has never been free until within the last two years, a nation which has been very largely, in fact almost absolutely penalized in property and liberty and person and life if it should undertake to confess the faith of Jesus Christ that you and I are free here to confess? What do we owe to a people of that kind?

Paul said, "I am a debtor," "I am ready," "I am not ashamed." Certainly we are debtors, but are we ready to pay our debt? If we are, and pay it, we need not be ashamed. But if we are not ready to pay, we should be ashamed.

REV. CHARLES A. BLANCHARD, D.D., President of Wheaton College, "What has been Done to Evangelize Russia," in *Good News for Russia,* Edited by Rev. Jesse W. Brooks, Ph.D., pp. 105, 106. 1918.

When the revolution broke out a year ago, from that time up to this night, the Russian people are turning, with their earnest, half European, half Asiatic faces, and looking to us. There they are in that land where hunger prevails,.... and where the sufferings of the Russian people are surpassing anything that we know. And they look

Digitized by Google

now towards us. There is no country in this world at the present time that could stand that long; there is no country that has the liberty, that has the resources, that has the power, as the great liberty-loving land of the United States of America. Oh, my beloved friends, they look toward us for help;.... Go to your bank account and look into it and then help with this work. Here are these one hundred and eighty-two million of white people, men of the same race as you, women of the same race as you, children like your children; and they do not know what do to. How will they believe unless they are preached to?

PASTOR WILLIAM FETLER, President, Russian Bible and Educational Institute, Philadelphia—"A Great Missionary Program for Russia," in *Good News for Russia*, p. 132. 1918.

Russia must be taught to think and to act. The carrying of the Bible to Russia, and its interpretation to Russia's masses, through the living evangelists and printed page is the need of the hour. Of the Bible, Garibaldi said, "This is the cannon that will make Italy free." Horace Greeley wrote, "It is impossible to mentally or socially enslave a Bible-reading people. The principles of the Bible are the groundwork of human freedom."

William H. Seward, Secretary of State under President Lincoln, wrote, "The whole hope of human progress is suspended on the ever growing influence of the Bible." In his centennial letter to the American Sabbath-schools, President Grant wrote, "To the influence of the Bible we are indebted for all the progress made in true civilization," while Froude, in his essay on Calvinism says, "All that we call modern civilization, in the sense that deserves the name, is the visible expression of the transforming power of the gospel."

• • •

America's highest mission to Russia is to carry to her that which has been the source of her own best life. Germany has lost her soul, and has sunk into unspeakable degradation because, in the name of a godless scholarship, she repudiated the Bible as the Word of God, the rule of faith and practice. Russia will find her soul, and be redeemed in the light of that blessed Book through whose truth American liberties have had their origin and support.

REV. ROBERT N. RUSSELL, D.D., LL.D., Ex-Moderator, United Presbyterian General Assembly—"The Russian Orthodox Church," in *Good News for Russia*, Edited by Rev. Jesse K. Brooks, Ph.D., p. 158. 1918.

An extract from a sermon preached by Rev. T. DeWitt Talmage, D.D., at Washington, D. C....

"Is America mentioned in the Bible? Learned and consecrated men who have studied the inspired books of Daniel and Revelation more than I have and understand them better agree in saying that the leopard mentioned in the Bible meant Grecia, and the bear meant Medo-Persia, and the lion meant Babylon, and the beast of the text coming up out of the earth with two horns like a lamb, and the voice of a dragon means our country, because among other reasons it seemed to come up out of the earth when Columbus discovered it, and it has

Digitized by Google

been for the most part at peace like a lamb, and unless assaulted by foreign foe, in which case it has had two horns strong and sharp, and it had the voice of a dragon loud enough to make all nations hear the roar of its indignation.

"Is it reasonable to suppose that God would leave out from the prophecies of His Book the whole Western Hemisphere? No, no, 'I beheld another beast coming out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and he spake as a dragon.'"

"Germany for scholarship. England for manufactories. France for manners. Egypt for antiquities. Italy for pictures. But America for God!"

Reported in the *Christian Herald,* New York, March 11, 1896.

Mr. G. A. Townsend, in his work entitled "The New World Compared with the Old," page 635, says:.... "the growth of English America may be likened to a series of lyrics sung by separate singers, which, coalescing, at last make a vigorous chorus, and this attracting many from afar swells and is prolonged until presently it assumes the dignity and propriety of epic song."

In "Aliens or Americans?" page 269, Dr. Howard B. Grose says, "Save America and you save the world." Through immigration the United States is in a unique sense the most foreign country and the greatest mission field on the globe. 'All peoples that on the earth do dwell' have here their representatives, gathered by a divine ordering within easy reach of the gospel. Through them the world may be reached in turn.... No such opportunity ever came to a nation before."

* * *

"We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness."

Declaration of Independence of the United States.

"We, the people of the United States, in order to form a more perfect union, establish justice, insure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and posterity, do ordain and establish this constitution of the United States."

Preamble of the Constitution of the United States.

Matthew Arnold said that "America holds the future."

William E. Gladstone made the following prediction: "America will one day be what England is to-day,—the head steward in the great household of the world, because her services will be the ablest and the best."

America stands today as the world's great mother. During the recent world war America provisioned a large portion of the world.

The outstretched arms of all nations large and small are being extended to her in grateful thanks, and for present and future help.

Digitized by Google

In January, 1919, the United States Congress did the unheard of thing in appropriating one hundred million dollars to relieve the world's suffering millions.

These things together with what led to her rise and the establishment of her democratic form of government, which grants civil and religious freedom to all, constitute her "The Good Samaritan to the World."

J. W. Hirlinger, Former Field Secretary Bureau of Home Missions of North America.

It would be a banality to speak about the gratitude of the Belgian people toward America. Every one knows from the beginning of the war that when the Belgians were faced with starvation, it was the American Commission for Relief which saved the situation, forming all over the country, in America and elsewhere, those Committees who collected the funds raised to help the Belgians, and saw that they reached the proper channel and were utilized to the best advantage of the Belgian people.

Gaston de Leval, Legal Adviser to the American and British Legations in Belgium, and Belgian Advocate for Edith Cavell. "Belgium and America," in President's Edition *Defenders of Democracy*. Edited by The Gift Book Committee of The Militia of Mercy, p. 3.

The divine act of Jehovah in confounding the language of the immediate posterity of Noah and scattering them over the face of the earth, is a most striking expression of his will, plan, and purpose, relative to the manner in which the world should be settled; and the local settlement of the various races of men in their specific territories has afforded opportunity for an exhibition of the various characteristics indigenous to each race.

Each race of men has its peculiar characteristic features. Some of these commendable; others objectionable. It is therefore conclusive that every race is dependent on the other for reciprocal exchange of those worthy endowments peculiarly bestowed by the Creator through nature. A realization of this truth would forever banish the narrow seclusiveness that has built up such a wall of prejudice between some of the more fortunate races, and the less fortunate.

"When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance," Africa fell to the lot of the sons of Ham. From the eldest of these sons, Cush, came the Ethiopians of whom the Negro is the offspring. On account of the backward condition of this continent, and its people for several generations, this race has become the object of contempt by the more favored peoples of the Caucasian race. However, it should be remembered that the present condition of the Negro in Africa does not represent his primitive history. Savagery among the modern natives of Africa is wholly a state of decline among this people. Goodrich in speaking of the primitive Negro, says: "Ethiopia presents a subject peculiarly embarrassing and unsatisfactory. Its mighty monuments, now surrounded by deserts, and many of them buried in the encircling sands assures us that there was the seat of powerful monarchies and a great population, in the remotest ages.

Digitized by Google

Oriental history as well as tradition furnish us with glimpses of these. But, after every degree of investigation, it is impossible to make out any connected narrative of the size, progress, and fall of the empires which anciently flourished here. It appears that besides other less civilized states, there were two kingdoms famous for their control over the caravan trade of Africa, and, in connection with this commerce, for their extensive influence in moulding the religious rites of Eastern Africa and even Egypt. These two kingdoms were Meroe and Axume its offshoot. Adulis the port of Axume, was famous for its trade in ivory. Axume the capital, still exists, and contains remarkable antiquities. Among these there is in the great square an obelisk eighty feet high, beside forty others of less size. Some of the ruins at this place are believed by the inhabitants to be as old as the time of Abraham.... Meroe whose capital was of the same name, comprised the peninsular region between the Astapus and Astaboras, now called the blue Nile Tacazze. Here was the center of the ancient Ethiopian empire. The existing pyramids surpass those of Egypt in architectural beauty."

GOODRICH, Vol. I, p. 606.

Another writer speaking of the influential position held by this people among the earlier civilizations, says: "In the earliest traditions of nearly all the more civilized nations of antiquity the name of this distant people is found. The annals of the Egyptian priests were full of them; the nations of inner Asia, on the Euphrates and Tigris have interwoven the fiction of the Ethiopians with their own traditions of the conquest and wars of their heroes; and at a period equally remote they glimmer in Grecian Mythology. When the Greeks scarcely knew Italy and Sicily by name the Ethiopians were celebrated in the verses of their poets; they spoke of them as the remotest nation, 'the most just of men,' the 'favorites of the gods.'"

HEEREN'S *Historical Researches*, Vol. I, p. 293.

It is indeed a grave injustice done to both white and Negro students to emphasize in their historical and other text books the present illiteracy of the African Negro as an evidence of racial inferiority, and to misrepresent him a son of savagery from the very beginning of his existence as a race when an honest investigation of his ancient history reveals that he held a high place among the ancient civilizations. Volney was forced as a result of his researches to write: "How we are astonished when we reflect that to the race of Negroes, at present our slaves and the objects of our extreme contempt, we owe our arts, sciences, and even the very use of speech."

VOLNEY, Vol. I, Chap. III.

The unflattering pen of another author pays the following tribute to the Negro: "The ruins of Thebes, that ancient and celebrated town, these heaps of ruins laved by the Nile are all that remains of the opulent cities that gave lustre to Ethiopia. It was there that a people since forgotten discovered the elements of science and art at a time when all other men were barbarous, and when a race now re-

Digitized by Google

garded as the refuse of society explored among the phenomena of nature those civil and religious systems which have since held mankind in awe."

"That universal power of imagination, which we see enveloping and penetrating the primordial civilizations, came entirely from the ever-increasing infusion of blood from the black race into that of the white."

"Again: The Negro possesses, in a high degree, the faculty of emotion from the senses without which art is not possible."

"Once more: It will be said that I am placing a beautiful crown upon the deformed head of the Negro, and doing him a great honor by thus associating him with the harmonious choir of the Muses. But the honor is not so great. I have not associated him with the highest, though reflection is superior to passion. And finally the black element is indispensable to the development of artistic genius in a race."

De Gobineau's Work, Book II, Chap. VII.

In America and all lands where the Negro comes under christianizing and civilizing influences, his progress is remarkable. This progress is an evidence of his native ability to acquire learning in every branch of civil and religious life that makes one capable of contributing towards the welfare of any State.

In agriculture which is the material basic stratum in the national life of every nation, the Negro has proved himself the maker of America, especially the South. The farming industry has bloomed and flourished under his labor. He came out of slavery without a square foot of land to his name, yet in 1913, according to the Negro Year Book he was operating at that time 890,140 farms. He was cultivating about 100,000,000 acres of land of which 42,500,000 acres were said to be under his direct control. "The Negroes of this country now own 20,000,000 acres of land or 31,000 square miles. If all the land they own were placed in one body, its area would be greater than that of the State of South Carolina."

The value of domestic animals owned by Negroes in 1913 was $177,273,785; poultry $5,113,756; implements and machinery $36,861,418; real estate $273,501,665; and their total wealth was about $700,000,000. One may search the pages of history, and he will not find such a parallel of progress among any emancipated people.

But it is not alone in material progress that the Negro has proved his ability to contribute towards the upbuilding of the State. His intellectual progress has been no less remarkable. There are no less than 405 universities, colleges, and other institutions of higher education operated in the interest of the Negro in the United States. From these and other schools into which he has been admitted the race has produced successful teachers, ministers, lawyers, physicians, and business men both North and South.

The religious progress of the Negro is almost incomparable. While material and educational progress are necessary to the upbuilding and maintenance of a State, let it be remembered that no nation has ever thrived permanently independent of the healthy, spiritual con-

Digitized by Google

dition of its people. The gospel of Jesus Christ is the greatest uplifting, educational power there is in the world; an indispensable asset to national growth and progress. We have in all parts of the country today Negro churches and missions that are dedicated to the sacred purpose of preaching the gospel. The value of church property owned by the various denominations of the race is approximately $57,000,000. The writer regrets that he cannot give some interesting items in detail along the line of religious progress, owing to a lack of space. This much can be said, however, that as in other lines of progress so in the religious field the progress of the Negro is world-wide.

Ask the missionary and he will tell you that the African youth will walk miles to a mission school in order to satisfy a seemingly unquenchable thirst for knowledge. The African News of January, 1893, contained the following: "Bishop Smythies who has had so extensive an experience of mission work in Central Africa, declares that the average African after he has at all been educated is as a rule a much more ready speaker and a much better preacher than our English clergymen. The Bishop has ventured to ordain one native priest who originally was to the Universities' Mission at Zanzibar as a little freed slave, and Dr. Smythies assures us that the career of this man, even if it stood alone, would be quite sufficient to give the greatest hopes of the future of the African."

All of these facts argue triumphantly that the Negro possesses indigenous, progressive qualities, and that his progress is not a state of evolution from savagery, but a condition of resumption to a former status.

Should not America therefore, the country whose government is founded on liberty and freedom show herself true to her own principles by completing the emancipation of the ten million of her black citizens, who have fought and bled for her very existence? Will Jehovah, the God of Justice and of nations acquit the American people at the bar of justice should she not now stretch forth her hands to give complete liberty and do her full duty in the mission entrusted to her when the whole world is hoarsely pleading, "Give me liberty or give me death."

W. D. Forde, Lecturer, *The Negro.*

A GREAT TRIBUTE TO THE NEGRO FROM A GREAT SOUTHERN EDITOR.

The love we feel for that race you cannot measure nor comprehend.... This scene vanishes as I speak, and I catch a vision of an old Southern home, with its lofty pillars, and its white pigeons fluttering down through the golden air. I see women with strained and anxious faces, and children alert yet helpless. I see night come down with its dangers and its apprehensions, and in a big homely room I feel on my tired head the touch of loving hands—now worn and wrinkled, but fairer to me yet than the hands of mortal woman, and stronger yet to lead me than the hands of mortal man—as they lay a mother's blessing there while at her knees—the truest altar I yet

Digitized by Google

have found—I thank God that she is safe in her sanctuary, because her slaves, sentinel in the silent cabin or guard at her chamber door, puts a black man's loyalty between her and danger.

I catch another vision. The crisis of battle—a soldier struck, staggering, fallen. I see a slave, scuffling through the smoke, winding his black arms about the fallen form, reckless of the hurtling death—bending his trusty face to catch the words that tremble on the stricken lips, so wrestling meantime with agony that he would lay down his life in his master's stead. I see him by the weary bedside, ministering with uncomplaining patience, praying with all his humble heart that God would lift his master up, until death comes in mercy and in honor to still the soldier's agony and seal the soldier's life. I see him by the open grave, mute, motionless, uncovered, suffering for the death of him who in life fought against his freedom. I see him when the mound is heaped and the great drama of his life is closed, turn away and with downcast eyes and uncertain step, start out into new and strange fields, faltering, struggling, but moving on, until his shambling figure is lost in the light of this better and brighter day. And from the grave comes a voice saying: "Follow him! Put your arms about him in his need, even as he puts his about me. Be his friend as he was mine." And out into this new world—strange to me as to him, dazzling, bewildering both—I follow! And may God forget my people—when they forget these!

HENRY W. GRADY, Editor *Constitution*, Atlanta, Ga. In a speech delivered December, 1889, at The Annual Banquet of the Boston Merchants Association.

We, here in America, hold in our hands the hope of the world, the fate of the coming years, and shame and disgrace will be ours if in our eyes the light of high resolve is dimmed, if we trail in the dust the golden hope of men.

THEODORE ROOSEVELT.

.... but for the present we must see to it that suffering humanity is cared for and not left dying by the road side.

A. AUGSPURGER, Secretary-Treas. Central Illinois Conference of Mennonites.

Now that the crash and clamor of the war is over there arises from all the distant places of the earth, and even from sorrowing places near at hand, the tragic lamentations of the grievously afflicted, the helplessly suffering, the hopelessly stricken, and it is to us Americans that they turn their sightless eyes, stretch their gaunt hands, lift their melancholy cries. Try as we may in our renewing prosperity, security, and happiness, we can not be, we must not be, deaf to these supplications, nor turn from the spectacle of worldwide tragedy that greets us whenever we look beyond our own boundaries.

What Henry Morgenthau, our former ambassador to Turkey, terms "the greatest single horror ever perpetrated in the history of humanity," the attempted—and nearly successful —extermination of a simple, harmless, industrious people, the Armenians, is knocking at our door today for recognition.

MME. X, January 26, 1919—*Chicago Tribune.*

Digitized by Google

Thou, too, sail on, O Ship of State!
Sail on, O Union, strong and great!
Humanity with all its fears,
With all the hopes of future years,
Is hanging breathless on thy fate!

LONGFELLOW, "The Building of the Ship."

America was God's destined heritage; not for tyranny, not for aristocracy, not for privilege—but for progress, and for liberty and for the development of a great and noble type of righteous, fearless and independent manhood.

FARRAR.

So long as Boston shall Boston be,
And her bay-tides rise and fall,
Shall freedom stand in the Old South
Church
And plead for the rights of all!

WHITTIER, "The Old South."

My ten years' sojourn in the United States has enabled me to appreciate the character of this noble and generous people, to whom no form of human suffering appeals in vain.

Was war ravaging the remotest regions of Africa, or of the farthest East; was a furious despot slaying his victims by the thousand in Asia Minor; were the forces of Nature causing one of those sudden catastrophes before which man stands impotent and overwhelmed—always from New York to San Francisco I beheld the immediate organisation of relief for the sufferers. American charity, under the star-spangled banner, ever arrived first, whether at Messina, in Korea, or on the plains of Armenia. But never was there such a spontaneous, such a magnificent outburst of that charity as when it was inspired by the infinite miseries of martyred Belgium....

When, ten years later, our unhappy country lay in ruins and blood, it was from the other side of the Atlantic that sprang the initiative of that admirable American work, "The Commission for the Relief of Belgium," which has saved the lives of millions of Belgians that had otherwise been condemned by the misfortunes of war and the oppression of a merciless invader to suffer death by famine.

But the inexhaustible American charity did not stop there.... When the hour of resurrection shall sound that nation will hold out its hand to Belgium rising from the tomb, and its generosity, I know full well, will aid our desolated country once more to blossom like the rose under the sun of Liberty.

PAR LE BARON MONCHEUR, Envoyé Extraordinaire et Ministre Plenipotentiaire. "Homage to America," in *A Book of Belgium's Gratitude.* Patron: H. M. The King of the Belgians, pp. 107, 108.

I BELIEVE the Christians of the United States should lead in the evangelism of Russia at the present crisis, because I believe we have an entrée to the hearts of the Russian people such as is not granted

Digitized by Google

to any other nation. We are told on good authority that the American Red Cross is the only institution of the Allies that the present ruling powers in Russia really trust.

* * *

The other evening I listened to Dr. Saillens of France, as he pleaded eloquently for Great Britain and the United States, the two nations most favored with the Gospel, to bring back to France the knowledge of the Cross. But the need of France is scarcely greater than the need of Russia, and if we aid the latter in carnal things, and fail to minister to her in spiritual things, heavily will this nation suffer for it in that day when even nations, as well as individuals, shall stand in judgment before God.

REV. JAMES M. GRAY, D.D., Dean, Moody Bible Institute, "America's Opportunity in Russia," in *Good News for Russia.* Edited by Rev. Jesse K. Brooks, Ph.D., pp. 180, 181.

America is a fortunate country. She grows by the follies of our European nations.

NAPOLEON. Quoted in *Forty Thousand Quotations Prose and Poetical.* Compiled by Charles N. Douglas, p. 67.

The enterprise of America precedes that of Europe, as the industry of England precedes that of the rest of Europe.

BEACONSFIELD. Quoted in *Forty Thousand Quotations Prose and Poetical,* p. 67.

The Scandinavian peasants bear no taint of past slavery; and as far back as their "Saga" reaches, they were freemen.... Repeatedly during services on shipboard I have found that every Scandinavian present took an active interest in it,... There is practically no illiteracy among them and the steerage passenger who read nothing on his journey was an exception; the quality of the reading was also remarkable, for on one journey I counted among fifty books, nine of Sheldon's "What Would Jesus Do?" and only fourteen novels of a purely secular character.... What a people we might be, if we would appropriate all that the Jew brings of spiritual vision and cut down his business ardour and craftiness by our own emphasis of the nobler gift; if we would receive the Slav's virgin strength and plant upon it all that we of older civilization have learned to hold precious; if we would emulate the German's thoughtfulness and thoroughness and not imitate and encourage him in the trade in lager beer and the use of it.

What a nation we should be if we would take the Hungarian's devotion to his native land and make it burn with just such a true fire upon the altar of this country; and finally, if we would mingle all the virtues that the nations bring us with the seriousness and loftiness of the Scandinavian's mind and heart,....

EDWARD A. STEINER, Professor in Iowa College, Grinnell, Iowa. *On the Trail of the Immigrant,* pp. 112, 113, 123, 124.—1906.

Americanization does not involve hatred or contempt of other nations, though there is a wide-spread misapprehension that it does....

Digitized by Google

No man who truly loves his own country will despise or hate the country of his fellow man. A man's love of his own wife or children is the basis of his regard for the families of others.... Nativism is a primitive instinct, unworthy of modern civilization.... Of all people in the world Americans should be freest from this selfish spirit. Yet it is well known that some of the most intolerant "nativists" were either themselves immigrants or are the sons of those who sought America as political or economic refugees. We have been told of a Boston man, proud of his ancestry, who was entertaining a young Indian, a university graduate, a cultured Christian gentleman. The Boston man was unable to make the impression he desired and finally said rather impatiently, "You do not seem to appreciate the significance of the fact that my ancestors came over here in the *Mayflower.*" The young man replied, with a twinkle in his eye, we imagine, "I must remind you that my ancestors were on the reception committee."....

America has been for millions a land of romance.... In the first chapter of Professor Usher's valuable book, *The Rise of the American People,* is a beautiful passage: "Homer placed the Elysian Fields, the abode of supreme happiness, in the West, the land of the setting sun..... The dull eyes of struggling European peasants have for three centuries seen in the United States the Elysian Fields....

Because of their restricted lives, their repressed aspirations toward liberty, people from all the world have sought America. The Pilgrims, Quakers, Irish, Germans, French Huguenots, Moravian and Bohemian Brethren, Catholics, Jews, Italians, Hungarians, Russians; all have found America a haven of refuge.

CHARLES ALVIN BROOKS, Secretary, City and Foreign-speaking Missions of the American Baptist Home Mission Society. *Christian Americanization A Task for the Churches,* pp. 10-12, 33, 34, 40.—1919.

The one hundred and sixty millions of Russian peasants regard America as a dream country. *The Outlook,* April, 1917.

You are the hope of the world! That isn't empty rhetoric. That is hard fact. But, you say, there are girls and boys in other countries scarcely touched by the War; in India, for instance, in Japan, in China, millions of them; there are girls and boys in Norway and Sweden and Spain and Holland and South America. Why, you say, are we the world's hope? Why must we carry that responsibility? We'd rather not, we say.

You can't evade it, Young America.... You can carry this responsibility and be glorious. You can throw it off, and be damned. But you cannot ignore it.

Before the War, the civilized world looked to Europe for leadership and inspiration. After the War, the world will look for them to America. We shall have the wealth, we shall have the youth, we shall have the energy....

Go to it! Go to it, girls and boys of America!

You are the hope of the world!

HERMAN HAGEDORN, *You Are the Hope of the World.*

Digitized by Google

America is the great laboratory of the world, where these problems which concern all peoples are farthest advanced and will soonest reach a crisis.

JOSIAH STRONG.

The issues of the kingdom of God in this generation are with America. STEINER.

What do a million immigrants mean to you? Some consider them just that many problems. We believe, however, that they are just *one million opportunities.* Yea, one million obligations. The greatness of this unusual opportunity is the measure of our obligation.

STEEN RASMUSSEN.

All hail to our glorious ensign!....

Wherever, on the earth's surface, the eye of the American shall behold it, may it have reason to bless it! On whatsoever spot it is planted, there may freedom have a foothold, humanity a brave champion, and religion an altar!

EDWARD EVERETT.

.... there is one nation whose dealing with us is the only redeeming feature in all our dealings with Christian nations, and that is the United States of America. She has been our kind teacher and our foster mother. May she continue to nourish us and may China grow under the care of fair Columbia, and never in the future do any act that will make the United States regret that she helped to lift up and educate China and bring it into the Congress of Nations. May the Star-Spangled Banner continue to wave over the land of noble women, the land of brave men and happy children to the end of days.

NG POON CHEN, 1913. In 1906 he became Adviser to the Chinese Consulate General, and Managing Editor of the first Chinese daily in America.

A million immigrants!

A million opportunities!

A million obligations!

This in brief is the message of *Aliens or Americans?*

In this country every man is an American who has American ideals, the American spirit, American conceptions of life, American habits. A man is foreign not because he was born in a foreign land, but because he clings to foreign customs and ideas.

I do not fear foreigners half so much as I fear Americans who impose on them and brutally abuse them.... Such Americans are the real foreigners.

Most of those who come to us are predisposed in favor of our institutions. They are generally unacquainted with the true character of those institutions, but they all know that America is the land of freedom and of plenty, and they are favorably inclined toward the ideas and the obligations which are bound up with these blessings. They are open to American influence, and quickly respond to a new and a better environment.

They naturally look up to us, and if with fair and friendly treatment we win their confidence, they are easily transformed into en-

Digitized by Google

thusiastic Americans. But if by terms of opprobrium, such as "sheeny" and "dago," we convince them that they are held in contempt, and if by oppression and fraud we render them suspicious of us, we can easily compact them into masses, hostile to us and dangerous to our institutions and organized for the express purpose of resisting all American influences.

Whether immigrants remain *Aliens* or become *Americans* depends less on them than on ourselves.

JOSIAH STRONG, Introduction to *Aliens or Americans?* By Howard B. Grose. 1906.

The praises of America are told abroad by every person who comes here and gets along. Some things to be sure, these people miss —the blue skies of Italy and the vineyards on the hill-side. But they have for them the compensation of such a liberty as they never knew before. The real reason why all southern Europe is in a turmoil to-day, is that American ideas of liberty are working there like leaven. We get our notions of liberty from the Bible and from the men who forced the Magna Charta from King John at Runnymede, but all other peoples in the world seem to be getting their ideas of liberty from us. That is what is the matter with the Old World to-day. The American idea is working like leaven.

REV. F. M. GOODCHILD, D.D., published in *Baptist Home Mission Monthly* for July, 1906. Quoted in *Aliens or Americans?* By Howard B. Grose, pp. 33, 34.

If I want to know the heart of America I will not consult the politicians. Before the war France did not know the soul of America. Your women came with their dollars shopping and your men came with their dollars, and we thought America was rich and commercial but without idealism. Now we know the soul of America and we feel you have been our saviours. You must not disappoint France now by leaving us to work out the reconstruction of the world alone.

DANIEL COUVE, Chaplain of the French Army, addressing the regional conference of the interchurch world movement, March 10, 1919.

In surveying the movements toward Christianity at the present time, the secretary of one mission board writes:

".... In pagan Africa, whole villages and tribes are pleading for Christian instruction, tens of thousands of converts are being received into the churches, and the Bible is being eagerly read. The first missionary to get back to his post in the war-swept section referred to above lost no time in sending an urgent cable message to his board in America. He was not asking for money or building materials, or even for re-enforcements. His cablegram read, 'Hurry up order for Bulu Gospels.' The hearts of the missionaries there are breaking because they cannot meet the pathetic demands coming out to them from the interior for the Christian message.

"In India the remarkable mass movement gains steadily. Whole villages and tribes keep pressing up for Christian instruction with a view to baptism. In one year the missionaries of the Methodist

Digitized by Google

Episcopal Church alone were obliged to turn away 153,000 who wished to become Christians, because there were no workers to instruct and lead them. One church reports *a waiting list of 1,000.* The Bishop of Madras says that fifty million outcasts are knocking at the doors of the Christian church in India. Naturally there are many signs of alarm among the religious leaders of Hinduism over these immense ingatherings."—*The Call of a World Task,* by J. LOVELL MURRAY, pp. 89, 90.

As a people we are face to face with the most momentous hour in our history. Stupendous obstacles which have long stood in the way of the message are now falling.

J. L. SHAW, Associate Secretary of a General Conference and formerly Missionary to Africa.

America the Land of Promise. Throughout the world America spells opportunity, plenty, and freedom.... A recent tabulation shows that about 1,400 Chinese, 1,000 Japanese, 200 Korean, 300 Filipino, 150 East Indian, 2,000 Latin American, and 200 Armenian young men and women are now pursuing studies in the United States. The period of study varies from one to eight years. Nearly all of these expect to return to their native land. Each will become a missionary of American culture and trade.

• • •

Says Tyler Dennett in his recent book, "The Democratic Movement in Asia," "Never shall I forget a frank conversation which I had in his palace with His Highness, the Gaekwar of Baroda.... His admiration for things American is so unqualified as to be almost naive, but I think I was most of all impressed when he said, 'I am thinking of calling together the missionaries and asking them to tell me their views on how we can improve the quality of the native priesthood. Then I want to call the priests together and say to them, 'Look at the missionaries. See the sacrifices they are making to help our people. You ought to go out and do the same kind of work.' "

• • •

"O God, make China like the United States," was the prayer of a Chinese official in a recent Christian assembly. What thoughts, what feelings does that petition, winging its way from the other side of the world, awaken in our minds? How do we want it answered? Do we want it answered at all? Do we care to have China like the United States in view of the political corruption, the commercial greed, the class exclusiveness which prevail to such a sad extent in our American life?.... China is a republic today because such men as Washington, Webster, Seward, Lincoln, and Hay have directed our thoughts toward the world aspects of our civilization. No wonder the East is interested in America. No wonder American travelers find pictures of Washington and Lincoln hanging in Chinese homes....

China's interest in America is not of recent growth.... It was in 1870 that Chinese students began to come to the United States under the care of Yung Wing,....

Digitized by Google

Gradually there arose the hope that China herself might become free, that some day she might claim to be the United States of the Asiatic continent. The revolution in 1911-1912 was but the coming to the surface of these aspirations. The movement seemed to spring from the ground. It caused America to wonder and Europe to fume; but to the progressive Chinese it was the most natural thing in the world. They wanted the latest and the best, and that meant America. Since the original step two counter-revolutions have been attempted, each with imperialistic aims; one was engineered by the great Yuan Shih Kai. Both having failed miserably, we find China fairly well settled in her republican ways. She speaks of us as "Our Sister Republic across the seas."....

All over China today may be found groups of the leading citizens, the literati and gentry, searching the Christian Scriptures for light upon China's political problem. America's belief in the Bible as the textbook of the nations has impressed the Chinese as the most fundamental thing in our life. And what is true of China now will be true of Japan and India and the lands of the Near East if America knows the day of her opportunity.

CORNELIUS H. PATTON, D.D., Secretary, Home Department, American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, Author of *The Lure of Africa, World Facts and America's Responsibility*, pp. 101, 55, 56, 91, 93-95, 112.—1919.

America has been called to be the Good Samaritan to the world. The christian principle of rendering unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and unto God the things that are God's, underlying the constitution of the United States, as well as that of all the state and other laws and regulations, has from the beginning been the great magnet, which drew millions of immigrants from every clime and nation to its shores. The providence of God, it seems, ordered that this land of liberty and freedom, should become the home of the suppressed of other lands; that they might have opportunity to receive finer traditions, higher national ideas, a more useful education, more honorable business standards, better economic conditions, and above all, the blessed light of the Gospel of Jesus Christ free from the benumbing influence of religious superstition. Americans, therefore, have a solemn duty to perform. As one writer states: "The first thing for every American to realize is, that every immigrant is a human being just like himself—just a person." Yes, that he is worthy of all the help that can possibly be given him. While it is true, that America is the Land of his "Adoption," it is still more true and worthy of recognition, that he is the adopted son of America, and should be so treated. He is the new American. All possible efforts should be put forth by both the State and the Church to make him feel at home, and to give him the training that will make him a better Christian and a better citizen, than he was before his adoption.

J. H. SCHILLING, Superintendent, Department of Miscellaneous Languages, Bureau of Home Missions.

Digitized by Google

Great has been the Greek, the Latin, the Slav, the Celt, the Teuton and the Anglo-Saxon, but greater than any of these is the American, in whom are blended the virtues of them all....

Standing upon the vantage ground already gained the American people can aspire to a grander destiny than has opened before any other race.

Anglo-Saxon civilization has taught the individual to protect his own rights, American civilization will teach him to respect the rights of others.

Anglo-Saxon civilization has taught the individual to take care of himself, American civilization, proclaiming the equality of all before the law, will teach him that his own highest good requires the observance of the commandment: "Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself."

WILLIAM JENNINGS BRYAN, *Speeches of William Jennings Bryan*, Vol. II, p. 15.

I love America above every other country. I am thrilled by her very name. She is more to me than native land, though I cannot forget that. But here I was really born into that which is not merely existence, but into that which is life, and that for which men have given their lives. My love for her springs from the larger life she has given me....

I am an American, and because I am an American I wish to cooperate with the people of every other country for the good of humanity. I do not regard the boundaries of my affections fixed, and I aspire to grow in that quality in which alone infinite growth is possible: in affection for mankind.

EDWARD A. STEINER, *Nationalizing America*.

It is the duty of the United States to protect the commercial rights of her citizens, but it is also the duty of the United States to protect the civilization of the world.

HAMILTON HOLT.

You must recognize that, great as the Stars and Stripes are, there is something greater—the World.

FRANK CRANE.

"The blood of the people! changeless tide through century, creed, and race,
Still one, as the sweet salt sea is one, though tempered by sun and place,
The same in ocean currents and the same in sheltered seas:
Forever the fountain of common hopes and kindly sympathies.
Indian and Negro, Saxon and Celt, Teuton and Latin and Gaul,
Mere surface shadow and sunshine, while the sounding unifies all!
One love, one hope, one duty theirs! no matter the time or kin,
There never was a separate heart-beat in all the races of men."

Quoted by Howard B. Grose, in *Aliens or Americans?* p. 268.

As the German dreamers of the past looked to America for inspiration, so the dreamers of today look to her to lead the world

Digitized by Google

to a new and wider conception of patriotism than the patriotism to a dynasty or a single narrow, jealous, self-conscious State.

A German professor of physiology at the University of Graudenz, Berlin, Dr. Nicolay, dared to express his dream of such a wider patriotism, and was imprisoned in the fortress of Graudenz for his presumption. "That new patriotism is already a living thing beyond the water," he cries. "Over there it could come to birth because there the dynastic patriotism of the past has become transformed into a true patriotism to an ideal. The new Europe has already been born, not indeed in Europe, but over there where there are no ruined castles and no mediaeval junk and tomfoolery. The new Europe has been born. Let it be the care of us Europeans who remain that it become a living thing on our old soil likewise, in order that civilization be not lost to us for ever in favor of America."

It is thus that a German professor at Germany's greatest university sees the contrast between the country of our fathers and the country of which today we are citizens. Not Germany, he declares, but America is the torch-bearer of civilization, because here has already transpired what must transpire in Europe during the coming generations if European civilization is to endure—the breaking down of barriers of race and language and origin, the wholesale burial of hatchets in the clear light of a great ideal of liberty shared by all alike.

The German dreamer in prison sees in the working of the American melting-pot the hope of enduring peace for Europe; even as the German laborer, rioting in the streets of Breslau or Berlin, sees in the quality of education and franchise, which the Americans enjoy, the hope of economic independence, and a greater opportunity for his children.

HERMAN HAGEDORN—*Where Do You Stand?* pp. 98-100.—1918.

The other day a missionary from Asia Minor was speaking in a meeting in Columbus, Ohio, and he took out a piece of a skull from his pocket and said: "This is from the skull of an Armenian on his way to the desert. And you can go around in that country everywhere and pick up the skulls and bones of the Armenians who were taken from their homes and who starved to death."

About a hundred thousand of us have found refuge in this country. God bless this country, and God keep it free! The United States of America has some of her most loyal citizens among those who hardly can speak English, because they know what it is to be under persecution, and they know how to appreciate this country more than some of you who were born here.

REV. M. M. AIJIAN of Detroit (Armenian), "The Armenians," in *Good News for Russia,* pp. 123, 124.—1918.

The time had come for the emancipation of the mind and soul of humanity. The discovery of America was the salvation of the world.

CHAUNCEY DEPEW.

Digitized by Google

England and France have groped their way through centuries towards a vague ideal. America proudly began her existence by a proclamation of the equal rights of man. She proudly proclaims them now; but the world is involved in such a complicated muddle, that the utterances of George Washington and Abraham Lincoln (to say nothing of their intellectual and political ancestor Jean Jacques Rousseau) require amplification. The political thought of the older nations of Europe is tired out. It is for the fresher genius of America to lead them towards the solution of the greatest problem which has ever faced mankind:—the final, constructive and all-satisfying definition of the myriadwise interpreted word Democracy.

WM. J. LOCKE, English Novelist, in President's Edition *The Defenders of Democracy*, Edited by The Gift Book Committee of The Militia of Mercy, p. 16.

What is your mission now, Old Flag?
What but to set all people free,
To rid the world of misery,
To guard the right, avenge the wrong,
And gather in one joyful throng
Beneath your folds in close embrace
All burdened ones of every race,
Old Flag.

HUBBARD PARKER.

The great mass of the mountaineers today belong to either the Baptist or the Methodist Church, and their religion is the fervid, soul-storming religion of the pioneer days.... The fervor of their proceedings in these meetings—shouting, crying, moaning, stamping, and clapping, is apt to strike harshly upon the more staid religionist, but the sincerity of the worshipers is not to be questioned.

Yet there are many, in the more isolated sections, who have not even the benefit of these services. Thousands there are who seldom hear the voice of prayer, who have never seen a Bible, and who could not read it if they had it. The story is told of a minister visiting for the first time one of these homes far back in the mountains, and there to a little family telling the story of the Cross. They followed him with rapt faces; and when he had concluded, the mother, leaning toward him, whispered hoarsely:

"Stranger, you say all this happened a long time ago?"

"Yes," he said, "almost two thousand years ago."

"And they nailed him to that thar tree when he hadn't done nothing to hurt 'em; only jest loved 'em?"

"Yes."

She leaned farther and placed her hand impressively upon his knee. "Wal, stranger," she said, the tears standing in her eyes, "let's hope hit ain't so!" [1]

There is no more promising field, both for true religion and for education, than in the mountains of the South. Its people believe in

[1] JOHN FOX, Jr., *Blue-Grass and Rhododendron*, p. 23.

Digitized by Google

religion and long for education. Their heritage of body and mind is the best of earth's; and they need but the help it should delight Christians to give, to make of them the most worthy recruits for Christian service.

ARTHUR W. SPAULDING, Editor, *The Watchman,—The Men of the Mountains*, pp. 59, 60.

"The smiles which the American Red Cross has brought to the faces of my people are the best expressions of gratitude I can give the American nation, for those smiles are but the reflections of hearts and souls touched by the kindness and charity of a greater people.

Personally, I am profoundly grateful for this Christian charity. As one sprung from the people and, indeed, a part of them, I do as they do, and simply say to the American people: 'Thank you, thank you, with all my heart.'"

KING PETER of Serbia. April, 1919. By the Associated Press.

The students of eloquence tell us that there are but three supreme moments in the history of American oratory—that of Patrick Henry at Williamsburg, Wendell Phillips at Faneuil Hall, and Abraham Lincoln at Gettysburg. Now what is the secret of Abraham Lincoln's oration at the National Cemetery? Upon the same occasion Edward Everett pronounced an oration of eighteen thousand words.... What is the note of power in Lincoln's ten sentences of 250 words? This brief oration is immortal because it breathes the note of universal sympathy.

NEWELL DWIGHT HILLIS, in *Northwestern Christian Advocate*, February 12, 1919.

Poland is the Niobe of nations today.... The story of the suffering of the Polish people in the present war and the heroism of the Polish soldiers is yet to be told. About two million Poles of military age were drafted into the three foreign armies, the Russian, the German and the Austrian, and lined up on the opposite sides, brother against his brother. The Poles realized that they must fight for their own independence, so they created the Polish legions, for which the people have sacrificed everything they possessed. Domestic servants gave all their savings. A blind man gave his instrument, a violin, by which he was making his daily bread. Gold rings poured into the treasury, and soon no married couples were wearing this emblem of wedlock. It was considered a shame not to have offered these rings to the military treasury. The ladies of the higher classes spent whole nights sewing underwear for the soldiers. One thought was uppermost in all,—the equipment of the Polish army.

"The Polish question is the key to the European vault," said Napoleon. Upon its proper solution the future peace of central Europe will largely depend. President Wilson in that memorable address of January 22, 1917, said: "Statesmen now agree everywhere, that there should be a united independent and autonomous Poland."

The Poles whether they are in Europe or here in America need the preaching of the Gospel of Jesus Christ....

Digitized by Google

So I plead today for these Polish people in this country. And God bless you, Christian brothers, Russians and all others, as you go out to Russia, many of you, to preach! But don't forget our Polish people and their need of the Gospel.

REV. PAUL KOSIELEK of Detroit, "The Poles," in *Good News for Russia*, pp. 111-113.

We are living, thank God, in a land of liberty and this liberty is something which we want to share with the people of Russia.

REV. JESSE W. BROOKS, Brief Words of Greeting by the Chairman, *Good News for Russia*, p. 29.

I am now ready to take up the question, why America must take the leadership in evangelizing Russia....

There are many reasons why the duty of leadership in evangelizing Russia falls to America.... America has the means. America has the strength. America has the mind. America is the only strong, free nation on earth not on her knee in a death-struggle for her existence. America is yet free to act and free to think. But besides these reasons why America should assume leadership, there are considerations which make it desirable in the extreme that the leadership at this time be American not only in name but in spirit. America is just now entrusted with the cause of popular freedom and democratic principles in the whole world. As long as America is in the lead and remains true to her traditions and her ideals, there is hope everywhere....

If in the race for supremacy in Russia, sure to follow the war, exploitation shall not run ahead of civilization, it is imperative that the American Bible shall go as far and as fast as the American dollar; it is imperative that American ideals shall not be lagging behind where American business rushes to the front; it is imperative that American faith shall follow the flag just as closely as American grit. And it is the duty of Christian America to see that this is done.

REV. DAVID NYVALL, President of North Park College, Chicago. "Why America Must Take the Leadership in Evangelizing Russia," in *Good News for Russia*, pp. 59-61.

Therefore it has been felt very deeply, by those of us who have had the burden of prayer and planning for this conference, that there must be some kind of a "flying squadron" which, having no other purpose in view and no other field to work, should take the men and women who have thus volunteered for this work and fly into Russia in these days, that poor, bleeding Russia may receive the only comfort which is adequate, the knowledge that Jesus knows, and Jesus loves, and Jesus cares, and Jesus keeps. That is what the people of Russia need to know. This is the only thing that will help them in these days when every edition of the newspaper comes out with some appalling change in the kaleidoscope of Russia and her revolutions.... Oh, let us seize this greatest opportunity of our lives for sending the Gospel into that great, wonderful country, with its nearly two hundred million people!.... We must carry the Gospel to the great cen-

Digitized by Google

ters of Russia, so that all the brothers and sisters of Russia shall be saving other men in many other lands in the world, and pointing lost men and women to Him who is the Light of the world, our Lord Jesus Christ.

REV. E. Y. WOOLLEY, Associate Pastor of the Moody Church, and Chairman of the Alliance for the Evangelization of Russia. "A Statement by the Chairman of the Alliance," in *Good News for Russia*, pp. 235-236.

God, the all-merciful, Russia lies bleeding,
Stabbed by her traitors and mangled by foes.
Hear, as we bend before Thee interceding,
Look on her agonies, pity her woes.

Send forth Thy Word, that shall bring to the nations
Healing for misery, hope for despair.
Lowly we utter our hearts' supplications,
Trembling we offer our penitent prayer.

ERNEST A. BELL, "Prostrate Russia," in *Good News for Russia*.

The day in which the United States would send to Mexico Bibles and books . . . ; the day in which the United States would go to Mexico to open schoolhouses . . . ; the day in which the United States will send to Mexico an army of teachers and missionaries . . . . that day the United States would be rendering a great service to my country and to humanity.

SENOR DE LA GARZA, said by the *Northwestern Christian Advocate* (Methodist), of February 12, 1919, to be "one of Mexico's leading lawyers and a member of the Mexican Congress, who recently toured this country."

The institutions established by our fathers we hold in trust for all mankind. . . .

And thou, great bell! cast from the chains of liberators and the copper pennies of the children of our public schools, from sacred relics contributed by pious and patriotic hands, baptized by copious libations poured out upon the altar of a common country by grateful hearts, and consecrated by the prayers of the American people, take up the note of prophecy and of jubilee rung out by your older sister in 1776, and in your journey round the globe proclaim from mountain top and valley, across winding river and expansive sea, those tones which shall make thrones topple and despots tremble in their sleep, until all peoples and all nationalities, from turbaned Turks and Slavic peasants to distant islanders and the children of the Sun, shall join in the swelling chorus, and the darkest regions of the earth shall be illumed by the heaven-born light of Civil and Religious Liberty!

HAMPTON L. CARSON (from the Oration delivered at the World's Fair, Chicago, July 4, 1893, on the Liberty Bell). See *The World's Best Orations*, Compiled by David J. Brewer, Editor; Edward A. Allen and William Schuyler, Associate Editors, Vol. 3, pp. 985, 987.

The United States is a country of destiny. When our forefathers established this nation, they, as Bancroft says, "Dared to set the example of exhibiting in its relations to God the principle first divinely ordained in Judea." A new order of life and government was estab-

Digitized by Google

lished on these shores,— . . . Since that day our nation and our constitution have been the models for many governments established by free peoples in different parts of the world. Like that colossal statue in New York harbor, our nation has stood for "liberty enlightening the world."

Now, more than ever, the people of the world are captivated by American ideals. It is almost pathetic how some of the downtrodden peoples of the world look to America and to America's president for succor and help.

Shall America fulfill the expectations of mankind? We are rich and increased in goods. We have been able to contribute most largely to feed the world during these terrible years of war, but we got high prices for most everything that went to these hungry people, and in the commercial transactions of these unstable times the innate selfishness of men—American men—has been shockingly apparent.

We have the means and material resources to rehabilitate broken-down Europe. Shall we furnish this help without taking advantage of their dire necessity? Most of all, we need to bring to Europe and the world the great principles of human brotherhood and kindness.

America has the men and material resources to bring the gospel of Jesus Christ to a sinsick and sorrowing world. Will we do it? Will the young men and women of America see the great opportunity for unselfish service which is opening on every side, and enter into that larger life to self-forgetful service for the Son of God and the sons of men? Young men of America, "who knoweth but thou art come to the kingdom for such a time as this?"

PROF. M. E. KERN, Washington, D. C., May 22, 1919.

101. The World's Need?

ANSWER:

The world needs those who *

* See Preface for more on this answer.

Digitized by Google

INDEX

Most of Bible Verses Noted or Quoted in Full or in Part

Genesis PAGE

6:7, 17 15
7:11, 12, 23, 24 15
9:26, 27; 10:1, 32; 10 ..... 18, 19
10:10; Cf. 10 and 14 ..... 14, 5
11:31; xiv:1 15
15:13....13, 14 ..... 25, 28
49:10 86

Exodus PAGE

1:1, 8....8, 13 ..... 22, 25
1:11 ..... 26, 27
5; cf. 5:1-19 27
5:7, 10-13 ..... 26, 27
12:37, 40-42 ..... 26, 28
24:4 24

Leviticus PAGE

19:34 153

Numbers PAGE

24:17 85

Joshua PAGE

6:2 38

Judges PAGE

3:5 35

II Samuel PAGE

7:8, 12, 13 33

I Kings PAGE

4:21-23, 25, 29, 31, 32, 34 32
6:1, 38 33
ix:1-3, 6, 7 33

II Kings PAGE

3:4 ..... 36, 37
vii:6; 17:6, 23 ..... 35, 43
18:13; 19:5-7, 36, 37 ..... 43, 44
19:10, 11; 20:16, 17 ..... 39, 59
24:6, 11, 14, 15 59
25:1, 2, 6....8, 9 ..... 59, 34

I Chronicles PAGE

17:3, 7, 8, 16 32

Ezra PAGE

2:1 65

Job PAGE

5:12, 13 19

Psalms PAGE

22:16, 17; 69:20, 21 99
22:16; 33:12 ..... 108, 124

Proverbs PAGE

22:3; 14:34 ..... 75, 124
31:4, 5 130

Isaiah PAGE

3:16, 18-23, 25 141
5:11 130
8:4 43
9:2; 11:10 ..... 89, 86
13 68
13:1, 17, 19....20 ..... 63, 67
13:19, 21....19, 20 67
14:9-20....24, 25 ..... 9, 46
16:6; 20:4 ..... 36, 31
21:1-9; 23:8 ..... 63, 57
28:16; 40:3 ..... 90, 85
40:8 ..... 11, 67
45:1 64
53:4....8, 12 ..... 98, 101
55:7; 58:6, 7, 9 ..... 124, 153

Jeremiah PAGE

7-10; 25:8-11 ..... 9, 60
23:5; 29:10 ..... 86, 65
48:42; 51:31 ..... 37, 63
51:26, 37 ..... 69, 67
51:39; 52:10, 11 ..... 63, 60

Ezekiel PAGE

12:13; 25:14 ..... 60, 36
26:4, 12, 14....7, 11 ..... 77, 58
xxvi, xxvii; 27 ..... 58, 9
29:13-16, 15 29
30:12, 13; 31:3, 10-12 ..... 30, 46

Daniel PAGE

1:1....1, 2 ..... 51, 59
1:8, 11, 12, 15, 17-21 147
2; 2:39; 2-7 ..... 72, 80, 77, 48
2:40....43 ..... 80, 122
2:27, 31-33, 38....48 ..... 54, 48
2:40, 42, 43....43 ..... 65, 120
4:28-37; 5 ..... 55, 63
5:1, 2 ..... 61, 62
5:30....30, 31 ..... 62, 63
7:4....5....6 ..... 62, 71, 76
7:7 ..... 79, 80, 83
8:1, 4, 20 70
8:3, 5-7, 20, 21 74
8:5-7....7; 8-12 ..... 77, 48
11:2....16, 17 ..... 72, 73, 81
11:2, 3....3, 4....3 ..... 76, 77
11:3, 4....4....19....20 ..... 78, 82
12:4 117
xiv:14, 20 49

Hosea PAGE

7:5 130
13:16; 14:1 ..... 43, 124

Amos PAGE

3:7 1

Jonah PAGE

3:1, 2 42

Micah PAGE

5:2....v2 ..... 87, 89

Nahum PAGE

1:1; 3:7 ..... 45, 44
3:13, 15....15 ..... 46, 45

Digitized by Google

HABAKKUK PAGE
2:15 130

ZEPHANIAH PAGE
2:9, 13 .....37, 44

ZECHARIAH PAGE
12:10 108

MATTHEW PAGE
2:1, 2....1 .....86, 87
3:1-3; 4:23 .....85, 98
8:1-4; xxiv:1, 2.....24, 111
24:15; xxiv:15 .....48, 49
24:29....35 .....115, 11
24:37-39; 27:27, 34, 35.....16, 99

MARK PAGE
10:32-34 108
15:1, 27, 28..... 101

LUKE PAGE
1:19, 26; xix:41-44 .....48, 110
1:46-48; 2:1 .....106, 82
10:29, 30, 33, 37..... 153
21:25, 26 119

JOHN PAGE
1:1, 4; 2:22.....89, 109
3:14-16; 5:39; 7:41, 45, 46....101, 1, 90
14:6; 19:33, 34.....90, 108

ACTS
16:30, 31; 17:24, 26.....101, 153

EPHESIANS PAGE
2:19, 20 90

HEBREWS PAGE
11:33, 34 48

II PETER PAGE
1:19-21 1

JUDE PAGE
1:14 49

REVELATION PAGE
6:12....13 .....112, 113
21; 22:16 .....98, 86

MOST OF AUTHORS QUOTED AND OTHER HELP

PAGE
Adams, John 145
Addams, Jane 126
Aeschylus 73
Aijian, Rev. M. M..... 181
American Tract Society..... 112
Anderson, Sir Robert, K.C.B., LL.D., ...21, 51, 61
Andrews, Elmer E..... 143
Arnold 77
Augspurger, A. 172

Bailey 153
Bailey, Mrs. Abigail..... 112
Baker, P. A..... 132
Balzac, Honore De..... 145
Bancroft 3
Banks, Edgar J.....16, 52
Bartholdi, Frederick Auguste...155, 156
Barton, George A., Ph.D., LL.D.... .....22, 41, 63
Barton, E. William, D.D..... 111
Bashford, J. W., Bishop..... 92
Beaconsfield 174
Sir Admiral Beatty..... 129
Beecher, Henry Ward..... 154
Belden, Franklin Edson..86, 102, 105, 110
Bell, Ernest A..... 185
Berry, Martha 162
Beveridge, Albert J..... 8
Bevin, Arthur Dean, M.D..... 135
Bible Readings for the Home Circle, ...79, 80, 101, 117
Biederwolf, William Edward, D.D... ..... 101, 110
Blackwood, Andrew W.....2, 8, 89, 125
Blanchard, Charles A., D.D..... 165

PAGE
Boscawen, W. St. Chad.....15, 26, 44
Bowman, H. W..... 8
Breshkovsky, Madame 163, 164
Brickey, William 4
Bristol, Frank M., Bishop..... 106
Brooks, Charles Alvin..... 174
Brooks, Rev. Jesse K., Ph.D., Secretary Chicago Tract Society..... .....154, 183, 184
Brooks, Phillips 87, 94
Brown, John 160
Brown, Theron, Rev.....29, 33
Bryan, William Jennings.....125, 180
Burdette, Robert J., D.D..... 104
Burritt 114
Butler, G. I.....112, 113
Butler, Nicholas Murray..... 119

Carson, Hampton L..... 185
Castelar, Emilio 6
Cherrington, Ernest H..... 138
Chicago Daily News, The..... 155
Chicago Evening Post, The..... 139
Chicago Herald and Examiner..... 53
Chicago Tribune 136
Christian Endeavor World, The.... 139
Christian Herald 12, 166
Christian Workers Magazine, The... 94
Clark, Rev. Frances E., D.D..... 26
Clarkson, Editor 116
Cobern, Camden M., D.D., Litt.D.,.. .....20, 25, 27, 28, 38, 42
Constitution of the United States... 167
Goodrich 168
Cornill, Carl Heinrich, Professor... 3
Cosmopolitan Club Motto..... 160

Digitized by Google

PAGE

Cotton, Archer V., in Signs of the Times 121
Couve, Daniel 177
Crane, Frank 180
Creasy 70, 77
Cyclopaedia of Practical Quotations, The 143, 145
Cyclopaedia, The International....37, 45

Daniells, Arthur G.....2, 78, 119, 128
Darmesteter, James 58
Dawson, W. J.....98, 108
Declaration of Independence of the United States 167
De Gobineau 169
Dennett, Tyler 178
Depew, Chauncey 181
DuBois, W. E. Burghardt..... 160
Dunbar, Paul Lawrence..... 160

Eddy, Sherwood 146
Eliot, George 5
Emerson 143, 154, 160
Encyclopaedia Brittannica, The..44, 59, 109.
Evans, W. A., M.D..... 151
Everett, Edward 160, 176

Fairbanks Educational Series Monthly Calendar Blotters, by A. W. Fairbanks.....132, 138, 140
Farrar 99, 173
Fetler, William 163, 165
Field, Eugene 88
Flavel 109
Forde, W. D..... 168
Forgan, David B..... 139
Forty Thousand Quotations Prose and Poetical.....1, 7, 153, 174
Franklin, Benjamin 92

Garfield, James A..... 7
Garrison, William Lloyd..... 154
Garza, Senor De La..... 185
Gilbert, F. C..... 86
Gladstone, William E., M.P..... ..... 11, 19, 91, 99, 167
Goethe 90
Goodchild, Rev. F. M., D.D..... 177
Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Dr..... 154
Goodspeed, George Stephen, Ph.D., ...43, 45, 64, 70
Gordon, Anna A..... 130
Gordon, A. J., D.D..... 3
Grady, Henry W.....154, 171
Gray, James M., D.D.....2, 55, 173
Greatest Thoughts About the Bible, compiled by J. Gilchrist Lawson, ...3, 8, 10, 11, 12, 126, 128
Grenfell, Wilfred, M.D.....142, 151
Griffis, William Elliot..... 154
Grose, Howard B.....159, 167

PAGE

Guiness, H. Grattan, F. R. A. S., F.R.G.S. 21, 83
Gunsaulus, Rev. Frank W., D.D.... 93
Guthrie, William 105
Guerrant, Edward O..... 162
Guernsey, Mrs. George Thatcher.... 160

Habershon, Ada R....17, 36, 39, 40, 45, 61, 63, 64, 72, 88.
Hagedorn, Herman 175, 180
Hague, Rev. Dyson, M.A..... 18
Haines, William T..... 138
Hamilton, Alexander 154
Haskell, S. N.....4, 50, 53, 63, 71, 81, 86
Hastings, H. L..... 5
Haynes, Carlyle B.....53, 66, 117, 122
Heeren 169
Herodotus 73
Hillis, Newell Dwight.....121, 183
Hinshaw, Virgil G..... 131
Hirlinger, J. W..... 166
Hirsch, Rabbi 135
Hodges, George H..... 138
Holland, J. G., Dr..... 86
Holmes, Oliver, Wendell, Dr..... 154
Holt, Hamilton 180
Home and School Reference Work, ...39, 42, 46, 85
Hopkins, Mark, D.D., LL.D..... 5
Houghton, Louise Seymour..... 156
Hoover 142
Hugo, Victor 66, 145

Ingersoll, Robert E..... 11

Jefferson, Thomas 128
Jewett, Sophie 159
Joffre, Marshall 139
Jones, Aesop, in The Christian Endeavor World 139
Jones, L. E..... 102
Johnson, Franklin, D.D., LL.D..... 20
Johnson, Gustav F..... 87
Josephus 29
Kellogg, J. H., M.D..... 149
Kent, Chancellor 7
Kern, M. E., Professor..... 185
King, Ben 159
Kress, D. H., M.D..... 150
Kyle, M. G., D.D., LL.D.....36, 38

Lamson, Justus G., Chaplain..... 6
Lansing, Robert 121
Larkin, Edgar Lucian, Prof..... 119
Lauder, Sir Harry..... 140
Lawrance, Marion, General Secretary Sunday-School Association.. 126
Lawson, J. Gilchrist, Rev.....128, 140
Lee, Robert E..... 128
Leslie's Illustrated Weekly Newspaper 129
Leval, Gaston De..... 168

Digitized by Google

PAGE

Lincoln, Abraham 128, 135, 139
Litch, Josiah 112
Locke, Wm. J..... 182
Longfellow 173
Lord, John, LL.D.....23, 58, 100
Lowell, James Russell.....96, 153

Macdonald, James A.....138, 143
Magan, Percy T., MD..... 65
Marquis, John A., D.D., LL.D..... 95
McCann, Alfred W..... 142
Mears, David, O., D.D..... 11
Mee, Arthur 137
Miles, Emma B..... 162
Milton 3, 124
Mme. X, in Chicago Tribune....151, 172
Moncheur Par Le Baron..... 173
Moody, Dwight L..... 67
Moorehead, W. G., D.D.....48, 74
Moorehead, Warren K., A.M..... 158
Murray, J. Lovell, in The Call of a World Task 177
Myers, Philip Van Ness...14, 21, 31, 42, 43, 45, 57, 65, 70, 72, 73, 74, 78, 80, 81.

Napoleon 77, 90, 174
Newton, Isaac 1
New York Journal of Commerce... 115
Nyvall, David, Rev..... 184

Okuma, Count Shigenobu..... 96
Olmsted, Professor 114

Parker, Hubbard 182
Parkman, Mary R..... 134
Patriot Phalanx.....126, 132
Patton, Cornelius H., D.D..96, 162, 178
Paulson, David, M.D.....147, 148
Paulson, Mary W., M.D....118, 143, 149
Pearce, William 95
Peter, King of Serbia..... 188
Phillips, Wendell 23
Poling, Daniel A..... 132
Poon Chen, Ng 176
Potter, Elam, Rev..... 112
Price, Ira M., Ph.D., Professor...14, 15, 22, 26, 33, 35, 40, 41, 42, 44, 58, 61, 64.
Pusey, E. B., Rev., D.D..... 71

Rader, Paul 118
Rasmussen, Steen 176
Rawlinson, Historian..17, 32, 39, 43, 45, 46, 51, 54, 56.
Reeme, Will K..... 136
Renan, Ernest 89, 90
Review and Herald Publishing Association 12, 79, 80, 101
Riley, James Whitcomb..... 89
Riley, Wm. B., D.D..... 10
Roberts, Philip I..... 127
Robinson, George L., D.D.....5, 124
Roosevelt, Theodore 172

PAGE

Rowell, Earle Albert....7, 20, 30, 58, 69, 77, 92.
Rousseau, Jean Jacques.....10, 93
Rupert, G. G.....54, 74
Ruskin, John 135
Russell, Riley, M.D..... 98
Russell, Robert McWatty, D.D., LL.D. 5, 166

Sampey, John R., D.D., LL.D..... 1
Sayce, A. H., M.A..... 31
Schenck, Ferdinand S., D.D., LL.D...3, 9
Schilling, J. H..... 179
Scofield, C. I., D.D.....3, 7, 126
Scollard, Clinton 87
Scott, Archibald, D.D..... 105
Shaw, J. L..... 177
Sheldon, Charles M., D.D..... 126
Simpson, A. B., Rev..... 34
Smith, Gypsy 90, 102
Smith, J. M. Powis, Ph.D..... 1
Smith, Uriah....4, 49, 54, 60, 62, 72, 76, 80, 82, 83, 122.
Smith, William, LL.D.....28, 37, 48, 62, 63, 67, 77, 110.
Snow, C. M..... 4
Sobieski, John.....136, 161
Somerset, Lady Henry..... 160
Spaulding, Arthur W., Editor The Watchman 158, 182
Spicer, W. A.....29, 67, 73, 113, 115
Spurgeon, C. H.....11, 87
Stanley, Arthur Penrhyn, Dean of Westminster.....4, 10, 28, 91, 124
Stearns, Samuel, Dr..... 113
Steiner, Edward A....154, 174, 176, 180
Stelzle, Charles.....103, 135, 140, 164
St. John, Milton H.....120, 126, 159
Stokes, Carrie Lee Carter, in The Golden West Magazine.....137, 162
Stone, John Timothy, D.D..... 140
Strong, Josiah 176
Sunday, William A., Rev..... 10
Sunday School Times, The.....128, 135
Sutherland, E. A., M.D..... 152
Suttner, Baroness Von..... 160

Talmage, T. DeWitt, D.D....93, 110, 166
Tenney, G. C..... 25
Tennyson 145, 153
The Outlook 175
Tiplady, Thomas, Hon. Chaplain to the Forces 146
Thompson, George B..... 120
The Gideon 128, 142
Toronto Globe 138
Torrey, R. A., D.D..... 6
Townsend, G. A..... 167
Trade Letter of the Union National Bank, Louisville, Ky..... 145
Tristram, M. A., LL.D., F.R.S..... 85
Tyler, B. B., D.D..... 100

Digitized by Google

PAGE
Vanderlip, Frank A. 155
Van Dyke, Henry 129
Vogel, E. L., Sr., President 144
Volney 169
Voltaire 11
Von Suttner, Baroness 160

Wall Street Journal 145
Ward, Henry Dana 114
Warner, Charles Dudley 126
Washington, George 154
Washington Post 129
Watson, John, D.D. 97
Webster, Daniel 127
Weinburgh, Harry B. 134, 150
West, Willis Mason 23, 58, 71, 101
Westworth, W. A. 9
White, J. Campbell 126
White, Wilbert W., D.D. 19
Whittier 173
Wiley, Harvey W., M.D. 139
Willard, Frances E. 95, 130, 144, 154
Wilson, Clarence T. 139
Wilson, Joseph D., D.D. 62
Wilson, Robert Dick, Ph.D., D.D. .. 50, 56
Wilson, Samuel T. 169
Wilson, Woodrow 128, 153
Wintringer, Margaret A. 133
Wolfsen, L. H., M.D. 150
Wood, Leonard 138
Woodward, J. Elwin 7, 18
Wooley, E. Y., Rev. 184
Wright, George Frederick, D. D., LL.D. 24, 27, 35, 62

A NUMBER OF IMPORTANT WAY MARKS

PAGE
Alexander the Great, conquests, 76; kingdom divided between four 78
America, and the World 153-186
Assyrian Empire, powerful, 39, 40; downfall 46, 47

Babylon, Ancient — when founded, 14; when and by whom conquered 21
Babylon, Modern—description of, 54; duration, 51; source of civilization, 54, 55; captured by Cyrus, king of Persia, 538 B. C. 63
Bricks, discovered made without straw 27
Bristol, Frank M., tribute to Mary, ... 106, 107
Burdette, Robert, Gethsemane and afflictions 104, 105

Caesar, Augustus, tax collector 89
Critics, higher, "shocked" 20, 21
Crucifixion, death by 99, 100

Daniel, defense of, 48-51; presaged call of Mr. Hoover in 1917? 147
David, his kingdom 32
Day Dark 112, 113
Drink Traffic, verdict of many ... 130-141

Egypt, ancient civilization, 22-25; conquered by Assyria 31
Elijah, hero like him needed 125
Extravagance 141-146
Flood, archaeology speaks 16-18
Greece, in prophecy 76

Hittites, monuments prove existence 35, 36
Hohenzollern, William, Daniel prophesies failure for dream of World Empire? 120; dream a failure 121
Hosea, hero like him needed 125
Howard, Philip E., street boy story 104
Hugo, Victor, on Napoleon and Waterloo 66

Intermarriages, royal 122, 123
Inventions 117, 118
Isaiah, "prince among orators," 3; word painting of him 125

John the Baptist, forerunner of Christ 85
Jericho, foundations of walls discovered 38
Jesus, Star, 85, 86; descendant of David, 86, 87; Light, 89, Corner Stone, 90; Masterpiece? 90-98; Great Physician 98
Jews, captives in Babylon 60

Kyle, M. G., settles dispute about Moab 36

Lawrance, Marion, Real Statue of Liberty 126
Lion with eagle's wings representing Babylon 62, 63

Mary, loyal love for Jesus 107
Medo-Persia, vast Empire .... 70, 71; described as a bear, 71, 72; Persia, led by Darius, conquered by Alexander, at battle of Arbela 74
Micah, prophesied birth of Jesus .. 87, 89
Moab, desolate 37
Moabite Stone, its story 37
Moody, a story about Dr. Hamlin .. 67, 68

Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, 51-57; insane, reason and kingdom restored 55-57
Nineveh, capital of Assyria, 42; destroyed by fire, 45, 46; taken by Medes and Babylonians in 606 and

Digitized by Google

PAGE

Assyrian Empire ends..... 46
Non-flesh diet 147-152

Passover, why instituted..... 28
Prophecy Bible, value.....1-11
Psalms, prophesy of Christ..... 99

Rawlinson, labors and reward..... 41
Resurrection 108, 109
Rome, terror and conquests..... 80
Rosetta Stone 22

Samaritan, Good.....153-155, 179
Sargon, Assyrian king..... 43
Scotch mother and daughter....105, 106
Sennacherib, Assyrian king, British Museum many memorials..... 44
Sheba, queen amazed..... 33

PAGE

Smith, Gypsy, war stories.....102, 103
Solomon's Temple, genius of its builder 34
Stars Falling 113-116

Titus destroys Jerusalem..... 110
Tyre, powerful, 57, 58; destroyed, ...58, 59, 77, 78

University, pagan? 128

Wall Street Journal, Call of....145, 146
Warner, Charles Dudley, defines ignoramus 126
World, owes debt to Pharaoh's daughter, 29; in perplexity..119, 120, 128-130.

Xerxes, his riches..... 73

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google